

苏小暖 著

邪王追妻：

废材逆天小姐

ATMOS
HEROINE



Chapter 101 – In enemy hands (2)

She definitely didn't want that kind of tragedy to occur to her own body.

Since that was the case, all she could do was to wait and see.

She was pushed to the front by Er Huang. While walking slowly, Su Luo's thought process was like electricity. Plan after plan rapidly went through her head, as she thoroughly searched for a way to escape her predicament.

She struggled to break free of the ropes that bound her hands behind her back, but sadly found that the red rope actually became even tighter. The rope tightened so much that it practically cut into her flesh. Su Luo sucked in a cold breath and immediately abandoned this method.

"Tch—" Er Huang scoffed, "You think it's just an ordinary rope? Truly laughable! That is the Restraining Spirit Rope! Someone who has no spiritual power actually wants to force it open? Dream on!"

Spirit strength, was it? After her sealed space had been opened, Su Luo was no longer that good-for-nothing without a bit of spirit power!

However, Er Huang once again opened her mouth and interrupted Su Luo's sweet dreams, "Even if you have spirit strength, without knowing the method, then you are only trying to no avail!"

Su Luo suddenly became frustrated.

Alright, this method could also not be used.

While walking, Su Luo pretended to trip over her own feet and fell to the ground, with her back against the wall.

In an instant, she pulled out the new dagger from her space to cut the rope. To her displeasure, she discovered that the rope couldn't be cut!

Okay then, she had to think of other ways.

Er Huang with a sneer, looked at her: “Stop trying, you can’t escape! Obediently come with me to the Jade Lake Palace!”

“Even though you know that I’m a space mage, you still use this method to invite me? You’re not afraid that I’ll blacken your name in front of your master?” Su Luo tried to use words to divert her attention.

“Blacken my name? You really think that you’re a notable person?” Er Huang laughed mockingly, casting a sidelong glance at Su Luo, with a face full of disdain, “Could it be that you don’t know that there is a magical technique called Control Intentions? It can directly control the human mind, making people into walking corpses. Do you really think that after you arrive at the Jade Lake Palace, you are able to choose?”

Control Intentions? Like walking corpses? Su Luo’s heart was palpitating with fear.

On the surface, Su Luo kept a wronged and lonely expression, but in her heart, she was secretly coming up with ideas.

This Jade Lake’s fairy’s maid must be killed before she meets up with the Jade Lake’s fairy! Su Luo absolutely could not let Er Huang leak out her secret, or else her life in the future would not be peaceful.

They eventually reached the end of the long secluded tunnel, and they had already walked past the long, winding underground river. Although Su Luo had racked her brain, she still had not thought of an escape plan. She could not help but be secretly anxious.

Now, speaking of the Jade Lake fairy’s side.

At the side of Nangong Liuyun, there currently stood the figure of a tall man dressed in black clothing. His entire body was wrapped in a black robe. He was standing rigidly straight, giving people a cold and harsh kind of feeling.

Nangong Liuyun received him. His gaze was devilishly charming and ruthless, revealing an ice-cold majestic light: “Are they all present?”

“Yes.” The black-clothed man was very respectful. “Three thousand members

of the Tigerwolf regiment have all been gathered, awaiting Your Highness's command."

"Search the Sunset Mountain Range with full force, you must find her!" Nangong Liuyun's face was a bit pale. Underneath his seemingly unperturbed eyes, was concealed a hawk-like penetrating sharp edge. His body was covered in a solemn and murderous aura. "If you can't find her, then there's no need to return to this king!"

"Yes sir!" The black-clothed man's straight and tall body bent down in a bow. He paid his respects and then turned around.

He lifted his hands. Immediately, three thousand people, shrouded in black robes, split into groups of ten, scattering in all directions to search.

Standing nearby, the Jade Lake's fairy had her fists clenched, looking at Nangong Liuyun once again speaking his desires, her serene and undisturbed face had a trace of fury that was difficult to conceal.

She never would have thought that Nangong Liuyun would actually send the Tigerwolf Regiment into the Sunset Mountain Range!

Chapter 102 – In enemy hands (3)

Others would not know, but she knew. The lowest level in the Tigerwolf Regiment was at the third rank. Their average strength was at fourth rank. With such a strong team entering the forest... .. She hoped that Qin Ning had already killed that slut and destroyed both the corpse and the evidence. Otherwise, this affair would become problematic.

Even more infuriating to the Jade Lake fairy was that this Tigerwolf Regiment had been secretly trained with painstaking effort, personally by Nangong Liuyun. These were his secret troops and one of his greatest trump cards. She had never thought that Nangong Liuyun, because of Su Luo, would reveal these troops.

This spoke volumes of Su Luo's position in his heart!

This discovery, almost made Jade Lake fairy grind her teeth to dust!

"Third senior brother, is there a need to launch such a large campaign? Maybe Qin Ning has already found Su Luo. After all, the Tigerwolf Regiment is formed from five years of your blood and sweat." Jade Lake fairy had a perfect smile, similar to a warm summer breeze.

Nangong Liuyun's pair of beautiful eyes were bright as stars, his face pallid yet resolute: "If the Tigerwolf Regiment can be exchanged for Luo girl's safety. Don't mention one troop, even if it's all of them in the regiment, why would I be unwilling to part with them?"

As long as his Luo girl was safe, regardless of the price, he would pay it.

A malicious expression flashed across Jade Lake fairy's eyes. She was only nearly able to continue maintaining her gently smiling face, except for a slight stiffening at the corners of her lips.

However, Nangong Liuyun was no longer looking at her, he had closed his

eyes and started to heal his injuries through cultivation.

He had to quickly recover his strength, his Luo girl was still waiting for him.

Speaking of Su Luo's side, she still did not know that Nangong Liuyun had already sent men out searching for her.

Being escorted by Er Huang like a criminal, Su Luo did her best to stall for time enroute, but eventually, she still needed to face the inevitable conclusion.

Seeing that they would be reaching that thousand-year-old ancient tree in another hour, Su Luo's heart grew extremely anxious.

She guessed that the Jade Lake fairy would be at that thousand-year-old ancient tree. If Su Luo waited until she was in the Jade Lake fairy's grasp, the situation she faced would be far different from the present. By then, it would be even harder to escape.

Su Luo's heart was secretly worried.

Suddenly, just past the mountain peak, Er Huang's footsteps stopped.

Her eyes coldly gazed at Su Luo, sneering: "Damnable girl, with your eyes circling around, still thinking to escape?"

Su Luo smiled sweetly and bluntly replied: "Haven't you heard it before? Fugitives who don't want to run aren't good fugitives."

"Oh? Then you must be really disappointed." Er Huang raised the back of her blade and gestured at herself.

"What are you going to do?" Su Luo's heart had a faint sense of dread.

"You're not thinking about alarming everyone by shouting when we are near the camp, with the notion of attracting his highness Prince Jin's attention, right? Say, how can I possibly give you such a chance?" Er Huang laughed treacherously. "So Miss Su, I will just have to work a little harder and carry you back."

"Hey, I'm very heavy!" Su Luo panicked.

"No problem, I can carry you." Er Huang laughed shadily with a measuring

look.

With her words barely finished, Er Huang struck without warning towards the back of Su Luo's neck with the blunt side of her blade.

If she were to be knocked out, she would really become fish meat on the chopping board, to be taken advantage of. Su Luo started to panic in her anxiety, but she could not come up with any solution.

Presently, both her hands were bound by a red rope made of an unknown material, with the slightest movement causing it to constrict even tighter. By now, it had already cut into her flesh. If she moved again, it would probably slice off her hand.

Extreme anxiety filled Su Luo's heart, yet there was nothing she could do.

However, the goddess of fortune had always stood on Su Luo's side.

Even though she let Su Luo experience numerous catastrophes, even being hunted down by countless people, she would always deliver a pleasant surprise at the very last moment. Just like right now.

Chapter 103 – Shaken to the core (1)

Just at the crucial moment when Er Huang's sword was about to cut into Su Luo's back, suddenly, the vast silhouette of a divine beast emerged from behind Er Huang.

Abruptly, a black whirlwind arrived.

Immediately, the sandstorm left pebbles in its path, and dust covered the sky. A desolate and harsh aura rapidly spread in all directions, even the night had gained a savage, bloody atmosphere.

A familiar omen, an ominous premonition, Su Luo turned around and ran!

"You still want to run!" Er Huang let out a cold laugh, raising the sword and stabbed towards Su Luo's back.

Su Luo's heart was extremely anxious.

Er Huang was enough trouble, why had the Venerable divine dragon also come back to, join the action? Didn't she and her treasured son already return home?

This situation was really that when it rains, it pours! All the misfortune had been encountered by her. Su Luo felt her heart crying out that it was unfair.

Er Huang's sword fiercely struck out, however, the moment it came within twelve centimeters (1) of Su Luo, it stopped.

The sword tip sat there frozen in midair, unable to advance even another centimeter forward.

Moreover, in this life, Er Huang would never be able to advance forward a single centimeter more.

It was because at this moment, her body seemed to be held in place. Her entire body was stiff as iron, standing there like an ice sculpture. Her jaw could not stop

shuddering, cold sweat pouring down her forehead. She seemed to be enduring a great deal of pain.

Suddenly— —

Only the sound of a loud –BOOM– could be heard.

Su Luo used all her strength to throw her entire body forward, protecting her head and firmly lying on her stomach on the ground.

It was only after the noise had ended that she had unsteadily stood up and looked back.

With this one look, even she, who had seen countless bloody scenes, could not help but be speechless.

Er Huang's entire body had exploded. Her limbs were scattered all around, and blood was splattered all over the place. The flesh on her body was charred to a crisp, even her skeleton had almost turned into powder. The ground was drenched in blood, marked with smears of guts and gore. This was a scene that could make anyone seeing it to throw up.

Su Luo turned around and wanted to run, but the divine dragon had already appeared in front of her.

Facing the divine dragon's pair of ice-cold eyes that were like an ancient abyss, Su Luo's heart involuntarily trembled. A chill that she had never felt before slowly rose from the soles of her feet to the rest of her body, to her limbs and through her bones.

She even felt that her back was trembling.

Just now, Er Huang's body exploding was clearly the divine dragon's handiwork.

It only had to wave a claw, and Er Huang had exploded tragically, not even leaving behind a skeleton. Thinking about how from the start she had kidnapped its treasured son... Su Luo felt her forehead covered with cold sweat.

All of a sudden, the enormous divine dragon in front of her changed shape, before Su Luo's eyes, unexpectedly appeared the uttermost beautiful and handsomest man!

A head of silvery, snow-white hair that poured down in torrents, lightly and wantonly dancing in the wind. It curved lovingly and was inseparable from that beautiful face, poetic and picturesque like a painting.

A noble and stern face, with an expression clearly written in four characters: I alone am supreme.

This, this person... could this be the Venerable divine dragon that was chasing her and trying to kill her earlier? Actually, it was not a dragon mother, but a dragon father?

Su Luo felt as if her throat was being choked, unable to say a word.

“Insignificant human.” The Venerable divine dragon’s phoenix eyes narrowed, a murderous aura flashed from the depth of his eyes.

Su Luo had all along kept a close watch on the eyes of the Venerable divine dragon. Upon seeing the murderous intent, without having to think, she immediately dropped down in a protective posture and rolled into a big hole beside her.

1) one cun = 3.715 cm or 1.46 inches. It measures the width of a person’s thumb at the knuckle. Here the author used three cun, so about 12 centimeters.

Chapter – 104 Shaken to the core (2)

Surrounded by deafening noise, Su Luo felt a murderous air sailing over her head in passing.

Half of her head peeked out from within the hole. Su Luo was astonished when her eyes met with the Venerable divine dragon's icy-cold eyes.

After one deadly attack by him, she was miraculously still alive! The Venerable divine dragon frowned in displeasure. "Shameless human, you dare to rob me of my son!"

Since the silly little dragon was not around, with a wave of the Venerable divine dragon's hand, her life would end.

Su Luo glanced at what little remained of Er Huang's body. She nervously swallowed and changed her expression to a flattering smile. Her starry eyes looked at the divine beast, silently made a solemn vow, and clenched her fist. "Your Venerable divine dragon sir! That was a misunderstanding, a complete misunderstanding! It was absolutely not what you think! I certainly had no intention of kidnapping the little dragon from Your Eminence!"

Su Luo was determined to never divulge the truth about what happened. The consequences of admitting her guilt came down to one word: death!

The highest level of deceit is not to fool another, but to fool even yourself! Su Luo made a fist. She was going to lie at a level approaching the celestial realm.

The Venerable divine dragon lowered his eyes, sweeping her with a look of disdain: "I'll give you a chance to explain."

The next few words would determine whether she would live or die. She hurriedly inverted right from wrong in her mind and began to speak. In summary, the story was that in order to let the divine dragon concentrate on

defeating the phoenix, she had taken away the little divine dragon to protect him. Finally, Su Luo said wholeheartedly, “In the end, the little divine dragon was returned to you without a single hair harmed on his head.”

The Venerable divine dragon’s cold eyes were filled with deadly stillness. He disdainfully glanced at Su Luo. “Despicable human, you dared to make an equal contract with my son!”

Divine dragons were very distinguished while despicable humans were insignificant, yet both sides had entered into a contract of equals. How could the Venerable divine dragon accept this?

At this time, the Venerable divine dragon had one hand behind his back. From within his sleeve, something small began to move. A small provocative head poked out as if desiring to get out. However, with just a pat by the Venerable divine dragon, it became confused and disoriented, thus tumbling back into the sleeve.

Su Luo began to cry inside her heart. If she said that it was the little divine dragon who had initiated the contract, she speculated that the Venerable divine dragon would definitely kill her with one slap. However, the Venerable divine dragon might not know all of the facts of the matter.

Su Luo wiped her sweat. She could only try to divert the Venerable divine dragon’s attention.

Su Luo pointed to Er Huang’s mutilated body with a look of indignation. “The Venerable divine dragon. When this shameless disciple saw me holding the little dragon before, she tried to force me to surrender the little dragon. She tied me up, the results of which you can clearly see. When I told her that the little divine dragon had to be returned to you, she attempted to kill me to vent her anger! Fortunately, we encountered you, the Venerable divine dragon! Your Eminence descended like the immortal god of justice. Your prestige and might are as vast as the oceans, your mighty dragon appearance is formidable.....The Venerable divine dragon had the kindness to save me, I.....will engrave it into my heart. Even if I were to die ten thousand times, I won’t speak of this!”

The Venerable divine dragon let out a –humph– sound, lifted his chin, and

knotted his brows. “Graceful words, definitely the flowery speech of humans.”

Su Luo silently thought: you knew that the words were elegant but insincere, yet weren't you very pleased to hear it?

The Venerable divine dragon looked at the shattered pieces of the corpse and also looked at Su Luo's thin and weak body. His brows once again wrinkled. “Incapable human, even such a tiny ant dared to take unfair advantage of you.”

Okay, Su Luo conceded. This Venerable divine dragon was very literate and accomplished, every word was full of condescending sarcasm.

Despicable human, shameless human, incapable human,...-XX-human, the space before human could be filled with a million derogatory words according to his whim.

It actually should not be too surprising. Confronting the human race, the dragon race had a natural superiority complex.

The dragon population grew very slowly. However, each baby dragon that was born had outstanding innate talent. Even if they did not cultivate while maturing and just spent time eating and sleeping, they can still stand shoulder to shoulder with the strongest humans.

However, the ant that the Venerable divine dragon referred to was Er Huang, right?

Su Luo defended herself, “That was because earlier my spiritual power was sealed. Of course I wouldn't be able to beat her. Once I've learned some magical techniques, naturally I will be far better than her!”

Chapter 105 – Shaken to the core (3)

Suddenly, a slender hand was placed on Su Luo's head.

Was he about to swat her dead?

While Su Luo was at a loss, a sudden burst of throbbing pain rushed through her head.

With just a moment's effort, the Venerable divine dragon withdrew his hand, and reluctantly expressed his satisfaction. "The Dragon Ring actually recognized you, a shallow, crippled human, as its owner. What a waste."

First, excluding whether she was shallow or not, but a cripple... the corner of Su Luo's mouth twitched.

Fine, this world was one where strength ruled, whatever the person with the hardest fist said was the truth.

Just when she was in the midst of being depressed, she felt the Restraining Spirit Rope binding her loosen. Once more, she raised her head, and saw that the Restraining Spirit Rope which was in the venerable divine dragon's hand, had been reduced to fine powder.

Really worthy of being called the mighty and powerful Venerable divine dragon...

Just as Su Luo was sighing ruefully, she suddenly saw a dark shadow being thrown towards her arms, which she subconsciously caught.

"Awoo awoo~~~~" The adorable little dragon looked up at her with his cute little face. His large watery and clear eyes looked at Su Luo with a aggrieved expression.

This is... Su Luo was confused by the Venerable divine dragon's action. Why would he throw his family's treasured son to her? Didn't he spend a great deal

of effort chasing after the little dragon before recovering him?

“Take good care of him.” The Venerable divine dragon frowned. Subsequently, he tossed a jade piece at her in a haughty and dismissive manner.

“What is this?” Su Luo carefully sized up that white piece of jade. It was smooth and glossy, like crystallized amber. Her beautiful eyes observed the amber alertly with a very perplexed expression.

Could the divine dragon really be this nice? He actually gave her something?

“Ignorant human.” The Venerable divine dragon’s lowered eyebrows expressed his dissatisfaction, both hands tucked behind his back. In a rare moment, he made a lengthy statement. “Contained inside the jade piece is my spirit strength, condensed into a virtual image of me. In case little Meng encounters danger, after you crush the jade, this virtual image will come out to help.”

The Venerable divine dragon’s virtual image formed from his spirit strength? Since His Venerableness was so confident in himself, then it would be very powerful, right? Then from now on...

“This piece of jade can only be used once.” The Venerable divine dragon lifted an eyebrow and shot her an indifferent glance, “Inside, there is a manual of Dimensional Imprint instructions, whether you can learn it all depends on your ability and luck.”

Su Luo was dumbfounded. In other words, if she still hasn’t finished learning the Dimensional Imprint when she crushes this piece of jade that could save her life only once, then wouldn’t she be unable to learn Dimensional Imprint later? This was indeed a difficult choice to make.

Seeing Su Luo’s confused and conflicted appearance, the Venerable divine dragon was extremely pleased. He used his absolute superiority as an advantage to look down on her and apathetically said: “If my son has an accident, you will die.”

The Venerable divine dragon gave the adorable little dragon a glare that conveyed the feeling of hating the iron for not becoming steel. However, the

adorable little dragon took no note of it as he flashed his huge limpid and bright eyes at Su Luo. His pair of paws tenaciously grabbed onto Su Luo's sleeves and refused to let go.

Not waiting for Su Luo to respond, the Venerable divine dragon used a little strength to rub the adorable little dragon's head. He decisively flung his sleeves, his tall figure then vanished without a trace.

After the Venerable divine dragon disappeared, golden rays of light flashed from the adorable little dragon's body. While Su Luo was looking on, the adorable little dragon's body unexpectedly underwent a huge change!

The originally fang-baring and claw-brandishing young dragon had turned into a cute, lovable puppy. Furthermore, his body was enshrouded in white velvety fur that meekly drooped to the ground.

This type of whole body transformation caused Su Luo to be completely dumbfounded. The little dragon had actually turned into a puppy?

However, this way was also good. Su Luo had originally been worried that after taking the little dragon into human society, with her current strength, she would not be able to protect him. Now that the Venerable divine dragon had turned him into a puppy, this relieved her of countless burdens.

It seemed that although the Venerable divine dragon looked indifferent and heartless, he had thought over this situation very thoroughly and meticulously.

"ah hu, hu, hu~~~" The adorable little dragon squirmed around in Su Luo's embrace, like a little piglet.

"You little hot potato, alas..." Su Luo glared at the little thing in front of her and used her slender fingers to poke his head.

Chapter 106 – Shaken to the core (4)

Recalling the Venerable divine dragon's warning, Su Luo just wanted to spit out blood. Now, her life was inseparably linked with the adorable little dragon's. If the adorable little dragon was harmed in any way, then she would lose her life.

Su Luo became aware of her body's fatigue and the grumbling sounds coming from her own stomach. After a restless night of being chased by people intent on killing her, Su Luo was so famished that her rib cage was almost visible.

She placed the adorable little dragon on the ground, letting it run around and play.

Su Luo took out the magical beast eggs left over from yesterday's meal. She dug a pit, placed the eggs inside, and covered them. Then she used a small fire to slowly bake the eggs.

Having finished setting everything up, Su Luo now had time to check up on the adorable little dragon.

After seeing the adorable little dragon's actions, Su Luo had a strong urge to throw her hands in the air or slap her own forehead in mortification—

Couldn't this little guy play with anything else? It had actually decided to go and chase after butterflies!

If the adorable little dragon was simply chasing after butterflies then that wouldn't be a problem. However, the way the little guy went about it was anything but ordinary.

Its thin little legs wobbled and swayed as it bounced after the butterfly. Seeing that the butterfly was about to fly out of its line of sight, a mouthful of Dragon's Breath containing fire puffed out. Immediately, the pitiful butterfly

was reduced to ashes and blown away.

But, the little guy didn't seem to understand what had happened.

The adorable little dragon looked in all directions searching for the butterfly that had already been toasted by his Dragon's Breath. The little guy looked until he became quite desperate but still couldn't find the butterfly. Consequently, the adorable little dragon's pair of huge limpid and bright eyes contained a pitiful expression. It ran with trembling and staggering steps into Su Luo's embrace to complain.

Su Luo didn't even have enough energy to scold the little dragon. She could only extend two fingers and poke its head without much strength while saying only three words. "You little idiot!"

Wasn't it said that when baby dragons were hatched, their minds already contained inherited knowledge? Weren't they supposed to be very intelligent, full of wisdom and foresight? Why was it that her contracted little divine dragon seemed like an ignorant infant that hasn't even been weaned yet?

A gloomy thought appeared in Su Luo's mind. Could it be that this little guy's intellect was so low that his dragon father wasn't being generous when abandoning him in her care?

The little guy was unaware of the doubts going through his new owner's head. At this moment, his little paws had dug out a magical beast's egg that was bigger than his head. The little dragon simply opened its mouth wide and swallowed the entire egg in one mouthful.

By the time Su Luo noticed this, it was already too late....

"My—morning—meal!" Three lines of veins burst out from Su Luo's forehead.

"Whimper, whimper~~~~" The adorable little dragon's pair of huge eyes had a bewildered and lost expression as it looked at Su Luo. His little tongue was still licking its lips while the little dragon grumbled in Su Luo's head. "Hungry, eat."

Su Luo recalled the Venerable divine dragon's decree. Her heart suddenly felt guilty as if she had committed a crime.

After all, the Venerable divine dragon had given her a piece of jade as payment for raising this little guy. How could she let his son go hungry?

Su Luo very quickly hunted down a rabbit and bought it back. After skinning and washing the rabbit clean, she stuffed its abdominal cavity with Red-root Gromwell and other types of flavoring herbs. She also rubbed a layer of cumin on the rabbit's skin before finally piercing it with a twig so she could slowly roast it over the fire.

While Su Luo was roasting the rabbit, she was also instructing the adorable little dragon. "Be good and wait a little bit. It will be ready to eat soon."

"Awooo, awoo~~~~" Little Meng Meng in a human-like manner sat on Su Luo's lap. Both of his little paws was placed on each side of its chin, sniffing the fragrant scent of barbecuing meat and watching the meat making sizzling sounds. Its pair of star-like eyes were filled with great anticipation and expectation.

"Oh, almost ready." Su Luo watched the oil sizzling on the roasting rabbit with a very good mood.

"Awoo, awoo~~~~" A silvery line of saliva hung at the corner of little Meng Meng's mouth. The smell was very appetizing, the little dragon really wanted to eat the meat....

Suddenly, little Meng Meng's nose began to itch. It became more and more itchy...

"Achoo——" A stream of Dragon's Breath puffed out without warning.

Chapter 107 – Shaken to the core (5)

Three fireballs shot towards the delicious-smelling roasting rabbit, and in a split second, that shiny, browned roasting rabbit was turned into a black ashy lump.

The roasting twig holding up the rabbit broke, a-snap – sound rang out. That black ashy lump dropped to the ground, disintegrating into fine powder which then scattered to the wind.

“...” The veins on Su Luo’s hands bulged.

“...” Little Meng Meng’s face seemed dumbfounded.

Not waiting for Su Luo to exert her authority as the owner, little Meng Meng had already rolled to the ground and started to wail: “awoo awoo”. He looked heartbreakingly at the powderized “rabbit,” crocodile tears flowed down and misted over his eyes. He turned his head around, and in a very wronged and innocent manner, stared at her accusingly.

Su Luo: “...” Why did it seem as if she was the one who did something wrong?

Just when Su Luo was still speechless, suddenly, she felt the danger of a human’s presence. She picked up little Meng Meng and turned around to run, but found that it was already too late.

She didn’t know when it had happened, but now, all around her was a troop of ten people; who tightly surrounded her.

Every member in this troop had their entire body shrouded by a black cloak; it was impossible to see their features clearly. They had a cruel and bloodthirsty aura that gave off a cold and detached impression to people.

Could it be that the Jade Lake’s fairy had again sent people to murder her?

Hugging little Meng Meng to her, Su Luo's heart secretly cried out bitterly. Previously, those people had come at her separately, so she could still use her wits to bravely fight each opponent one by one. But now, she was suddenly swarmed by about ten people. It would be difficult for her two fists to withstand their four legs.

Just as a bitter expression started to take over Su Luo's face, suddenly, the leader of those people, with his deep cold voice, issued out: "Could your distinguished self be Miss Su?"

Su Luo suspected even more that these people were sent by the Jade Lake's fairy.

Able to send out such a team, among the prominent people she had offended, other than the Jade Lake's fairy, who else was there?

Could she deny this? Very clearly she could not.

This was because the leader of these person actually took out a picture scroll from within his chest area. He looked back and forth, comparing Su Luo to the image on the picture scroll. Finally, he rolled up the picture scroll and placed it back. His pair of dark, solemn eyes looked towards Su Luo without a trace of warmth. "Come with us."

They weren't going to kill her on the spot?

Su Luo's heart was secretly on guard. Rationally speaking, Er Huang had already died, so the Jade Lake Palace's people wouldn't know her secret now, thus they had no reason to leave her alive.

Could it be, they weren't people sent by the Jade Lake's fairy? Then who could that person who sent them be?

Su Luo's heart become more alert, she softly asked. "Who sent you guys?" They actually had a picture scroll!

"No comment." Responded the leader of the group of people, whose indifference was like an Asura that came from hell. His appearance was of a person who had lived for a long time in the dark shadows, giving off a brooding, bloodthirsty, icy aura.

Other people might view this type of person with mind-numbing fear. However, Su Luo had also lived in that dark world as a gold medal level assassin, in her previous world. Thus, she knew this feeling well, and it gave her a feeling of familiarity and comfort.

“Ok, I’ll go with you.” Since resistance was futile, she could only go with them.

Although Su Luo’s expression was indifferent, her heart had relaxed some.

The ten people surrounded her, with her in the center, so as to keep a close watch over her, while also protecting her. Even though she felt a bloodthirsty, cold atmosphere from their bodies. That was their aura from having resided in the dark world for a long time, not a killing intent aimed at her.

At this time, hiding behind an ancient tree was Qin Ning, who was so angry that she nearly spit out blood.

She had followed the tracks looking for Su Luo, but what she couldn’t believe was that along the way, she could only find Cui Yu and Er Huang’s corpses. In all likelihood, Nen Lu had probably ended up in the same disastrous state.

While that Su Luo was actually safe and secure. She was even so carefree as to leisurely roast a rabbit!

This discovery caused Qin Ning to almost grind her teeth into dust!

Qin Ning didn’t know that those ten people in black robes were his highness Prince Jin’s secret troops. However, she had a hunch that if Su Luo was taken away by them, information about Young Mistress wanting to kill Su Luo would be divulged. Then this matter could definitely affect the feelings and trust between the Young Mistress and Prince Jin.

Therefore, this time, Su Luo had to die!

Qin Ning was concealed within the lush leaves on top of the ancient tree. Her arms pulling the string of a bent bow. A sharp feathered arrow emitted a dim radiance in the dark night.

Chapter 108 – Life and death at stake (1)

Suddenly, a whoosh sound erupted as a meteor-like arrow flew towards Su Luo's throat.

Qin Ning held a cruel sneer at the corners of her lips. Her eyes glowed with a vicious, malicious light as the bow in her hands continuously launched arrows nonstop. The whoosh, whoosh, whoosh sounds were endless as cold arrows flew out.

“Watch out!” Among the bodyguards protecting Su Luo, the black robed leader was the first to notice an anomaly in the air and loudly raised the alarm before heading in front of Su Luo to block the arrow.

When it came to weapons, Qin Ning's expertise was in using the bow and arrow.

Her archery skills came from having been personally taught by the Archery God Elder Shou Wu. Vicious and bold, the archery technique was awe-inspiring. The strength displayed with the bow made it seem as if the wielder could launch a powerful arrow that would even pierce the sky!

If it was a direct confrontation, Qin Ning might lose. However, when it came to sniping using icy arrows, she definitely had cause to be proud.

Whoosh whoosh whoosh, nine stars shot in succession — nine arrows bursting with a sinister, lethal aura.

Ten black-robed men surrounded Su Luo, putting her in the center. Their weapons were deployed vigorously and their skillful movements were quick like the wind. They had enclosed Su Luo completely, their protection was flawless.

These people... .. Su Luo's eyes held a flash of doubt.

Looking at their battle formation, their priority clearly was to protect her, even if they had to sacrifice their own lives. But why? Who would sacrifice these strong killers for her protection? Su Luo's heart blazed with heavy suspicion.

Earlier, when the black-robed men had located Su Luo, they had released a burst of blue fireworks into the sky.

When the signal sounded, Nangong Liuyun was at the most crucial moment of his healing regimen yet he decisively forced himself to cease the process. Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun opened his eyes, revealing an expression of profound fondness in their depths.

Nangong Liuyun's personal bodyguard Ling Feng stood nearby. With both hands holding his sword to his chest, Ling Feng was vigilantly observing their surroundings in a state of readiness.

Nangong Liuyun suddenly stood. His hawk-like eyes gazed sharply at Ling Feng and with eyes full of elation asked. "They've found her?"

Ling Feng worriedly looked at Nangong Liuyun. "Please rest easy, Your Highness. The eleventh group sent back the signal, stating that they have already found Miss Su and that she is safe and sound. She does not seem to be injured."

Nangong Liuyun's demonically magnificent lips that were as red as blood suddenly spread into a perfect smile — so incomparably alluring that it could charm all living things. Ling Feng could only look on as Nangong Liuyun laughed heartily: "Good! Very good! I knew that Luo girl would be fine..... *cough cough cough.....*"

He loudly coughed then covered his chest, forcibly suppressing his roiling qi and blood before resolutely ordering. "Lead the way"

Ling Feng worriedly glanced at Nangong Liuyun's wound and hesitatingly said. "Master, group eleven is currently escorting Miss Su here. Moreover, the remaining groups are on their way to meet up with group eleven. How about....."

Nangong Liuyun's gaze turned malicious and blood-thirsty. His cold anger

flared and a thick layer of ice encased Nangong Liuyun's chiselled face. He dispassionately glared at Ling Feng. "Lead the way!"

"But....." Considering that his Highness had injured his internal organs by forcibly stopping the recovery process, he really should not be moving about. Besides, Miss Su has already been found and was on her way here... Ling Feng did not understand what the rush was.

Nangong Liuyun's eyes exhibited a strong tyrannical air. From head to toe he was encased in a layer of frost that isolated him from the rest of the world.

He raised his sleeve. A critical palm strike lashed out and Ling Feng's body abruptly flew backwards. By the time Ling Feng managed to come to a stop and crawl up to a kneeling position, a trail of fresh blood was flowing down from the corner of his mouth.

"Lead the way!" Nangong Liuyun's body emitted an intense chill. Cold as ice, his entire person resembled a destructive, ruthless glacier.

Ling Feng covered the painful gash. He reluctantly but solemnly nodded before staggering up and heading forward, taking the lead.

Chapter 109 – Life and death at stake (2)

“Third senior brother...” The Jade Lake fairy’s footsteps were lithe and graceful, like that of the immortal fairy Ling Bo (1). She floated to Nangong Liuyun’s side.

She stood there with an elegant and graceful posture. Her beautiful calm face had a touch of concern. Her beautiful eyes were clouded like liquid mist. They appeared to silently gaze at Nangong Liuyun with traces of pity.

Nangong Liuyun’s red lips slowly lifted. His deep, glittering eyes were shining like the lively, colorful rays of sunlight, “Luo Luo was found, I’ll go bring her back right now!”

Jade Lake fairy’s hands, which were hidden within her sleeves, clenched into fists. She was barely able to maintain the perfect smile on her face.

He would rather hurt himself and forcefully stop the recovery process to go look for her! He would rather injure his personal bodyguard, who had been with him for more than ten years, in order to go look for her!

“Third senior brother, if that Miss Su knew of your current situation, she would certainly not blame you. It’s better if you remained behind to recuperate from your injuries.....”

However, before the Jade Lake fairy could finish speaking, Nangong Liuyun had brushed her aside and left with staggered large steps. He left her with only these vague words. “Wait for us to come back.”

‘Wait for us to come back’, it was not, ‘wait for me to come back’....

Behind him, the veins of the Jade Lake fairy’s pair of slender hands suddenly burst out, her matchless beautiful face became extremely hideous and distorted, and her eyes shone with a vicious insanity.

Why was that little slut still not dead! She had even been found by the

Tigerwolf Regiment!

The otherworldly Jade Lake fairy punched the ten thousand year old ancient tree beside her, and the ancient tree immediately turned into dust!

How in the world did Qi Ning not accomplish such a task! She couldn't even kill a good-for-nothing who was without a touch of spirit strength! What a piece of trash! They were all useless garbage!

No! She couldn't let third senior brother find Su Luo before her!

The Jade Lake fairy's eyes flashed with malicious light. She brandished her long sleeves and flew towards that direction.

Speaking of Nangong Liuyun.

When he saw Su Luo's silhouette once again, at that instant, he experienced a change like going from heaven to hell.

His Luo girl was really alright! She stood there with her entire body unharmed. At first, he was ecstatic, but almost at the same time, his heart dropped back down into hell again!

This was because from a long distance away, he saw an arrow containing the inexhaustible power of Heaven and Earth tearing through space flying ruthlessly towards Su Luo's heart!

The arrow approached with the momentum of a torrential rush, extremely accurate and impossible to avoid!

The person who shot the arrow had at least the strength of a fifth rank!

In a split second, Nangong Liuyun's heart almost leaped out of his throat.

Both of his eyes started to smolder like a red hot flat iron. The temples on both sides of his head violently throbbed. His complexion hazed over with an oppressiveness that was on the fringe of almost devouring people.

He was simply too far away, basically, the water from afar that couldn't be used to quench the fire!

Fortunately, at the last second, a black-robed killer saw the threat, and without the slightest hesitation, he stood ramrod straight in front of Su Luo to

shield her!

Only now did Nangong Liuyun relaxed his breath, but abruptly, he felt the accumulated power of Heaven and Earth coming from that darting arrow.

He had a very bad feeling.

Sure enough, that flying arrow actually went through the black-robed killer's body, piercing through like hot knife through butter. It then proceeded towards Su Luo's heart again. What was freakishly strange was that the speed and strength of the arrow was unabated.

Nangong Liuyun's facial muscles violently fluctuated up and down, there was a frighteningly bleak expression on his face!

Su Luo's view was blocked by the black-robed man, his back was also very close to her, therefore she did not discover the still approaching arrow. When she found out, it was already too late to evade it.

The arrow darted with extraordinary sharpness, with the sound whistling through the wind, thrusting firmly towards Su Luo's heart.

However, when it was a handwidth (2) away from Su Luo's heart, all of a sudden, something unimaginable, and unbelievable occurred, leading to a huge reversal!

Just when everyone was about to witness Su Luo meeting a tragic end——

A huge occurrence took place !!!!

1) Immortal fairy Ling Bo – She was a beautiful fairy that served the Emperor in Heaven from Chinese fables. The story I remember is a tragic love story of her being the water goddess of a lake and falling in love with a mortal, resulting in daffodils being displayed on New Year's to symbolize this story.

2) Handwidth – The Chinese words were three cun, as mentioned before, one cun equals more than three centimeters. Traditionally, three cun measures the width of all the fingers side-by-side on one hand, so this measurement was used in the translation.

Chapter 110 – Life and death at stake (3)

A deranged, malicious light flashed within the eyes of the Jade Lake's fairy.

Everyone could only stare as the puppy covered in pure snow-white fur sitting on Su Luo's shoulder playing with her finger casually extended a little paw, and actually—

It actually, effortlessly, firmly caught that bizarre changing arrow!

It should be said that this arrow contained the might of Heaven and Earth, its strength was so great that it would pass through a body without losing momentum. Even Su Luo would not be able to avoid it. However, this type of arrow was actually caught by a puppy?!?

Furthermore, he had grabbed it so effortlessly, making it seem as if he casually caught the arrow in passing.

What kind of a situation was this?

Practically everyone present had their eyes wide open in disbelief. They were all dumbstruck, stupidly staring at little Meng Meng without blinking.

Little Meng Meng's action could be said to have made everyone's jaw drop!

With a pair of large misty eyes, Meng Meng adorably sat on top of Su Luo's shoulder. His two little legs were crossed with his two little paws holding the arrow on both ends. Like eating a stalk of sugar cane – “crunch crunch crunch” bite after bite, he gnawed on the arrow as if it was incredibly delicious.

Momentarily, everyone was stunned and in shock...

That arrow had been made from extracted ancient black iron ore. It was classified as a top-grade weapon, incomparably hard and durable. Ordinary swords were simply incapable of even scratching it.

However, this puppy... he had almost completely gnawed through all of it.

Furthermore, he was chewing with such delight, as if it was the most delicious food in the world.

At this point, other than feeling that it was hard to believe what was happening in front of their eyes, the people present could only remain speechless.

What kind of teeth were those? Chewing so hard that “crunch, crunch” sounds resulted? Even just watching this scene made their teeth feel sore on the puppy’s behalf.

It was only at this moment that little Meng Meng noticed that he had become the focus of everyone’s attention. Meng Meng was still holding the half-eaten arrow in his paws and had a mouthful of iron that had yet to be swallowed. With such a ridiculous appearance, he returned everyone’s gaze.

Suddenly, Meng Meng seemed to have come to his senses. He quickly discarded the arrow and very bashfully threw himself into Su Luo’s arms. Meng Meng covered his little face with his two little paws and very shyly tucked himself into her embrace.

Su Luo felt the corner of her mouth twitch as three black lines appeared on her forehead!

She had a strong urge to grab the little guy’s ear and scold him.

Please! Where is your domineering attitude? Why don’t you display some of that legendary dragon race’s autocratic demeanor?

Even though your dragon father changed your outer appearance to that of a puppy, but inside you are still a dragon, ok? Furthermore, in your veins runs the blood of the mighty and awe inspiring divine dragon! How can you give off such a bashful manner? You are destroying the dignity of your dragon race, don’t you think?

Su Luo, with three black lines on her forehead, speechlessly patted the little thing that was squirming around in her embrace.

Why did she suddenly have the feeling that she had become a mother? Would this end well?

While Su Luo and little Meng Meng were having their silent exchange, Nangong Liuyun had already taken large strides to stand in front of Su Luo.

Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun and the corner of her mouth slowly curved up into an ironic smile. Without any hesitation, she turned around and walked away.

However, not allowing Su Luo to take a single step, Nangong Liuyun's figure flashed and quick as lightning seized her wrist.

His hand was as cold as ice.

Su Luo started to fiercely struggle free.

However, no matter how hard she struggled, Nangong Liuyun's hold was like an iron clamp, rock-firm and unyielding. She was completely unable to shake it off.

In contrast, Nangong Liuyun only stared attentively at Su Luo. His pearly eyes were as deep and pitch-black as a lake. Centimeter by centimeter, he scanned Su Luo all over, looking at every pore on her body in an extremely careful and serious manner.

Su Luo returned his gaze, looking into those beautiful pupils that were as dark as an abyss containing a very complicated expression in its depths. She didn't understand his actions, nor did she want to understand.

Suddenly, the cold placid look in Nangong Liuyun's eyes turned into a tempest, releasing a fierce frosty light. Glaring at her, he furiously said. "Where did you run off to for an entire day and night? Didn't I tell you not to leave?! Why didn't you remain at the original place and wait for me?"

Chapter 111 – A bitter kiss (1)

Day and night, despite being constantly hunted down, constantly escaping and facing several dangerous, life-or-death situations, Su Luo had never felt depressed. But when faced with Nangong Liuyun's repeated interrogation, the softest spots near her heart suddenly throbbed with pain.

It was a faint, gradual and dull pain.

Su Luo's unwavering and experienced well-like eyes gazed back at Nangong Liuyun, lightly and dimly. The corners of her lips lifted into a breezy smile, indifferently spitting out two words: "Let go."

Nangong Liuyun grip locked onto Su Luo's hand. Not only did he not let up, his grip tightened even more. Ink-black eyes stared with an overbearingly imposing chilly vigor. There was also a faint wavering emotion that Su Luo could not read.

In the end, it was still Su Luo who conceded first. Her nose twitched slightly, and taking a deep breath, she batted her jet black eyelashes insincerely at Nangong Liuyun: "Your Highness Prince Jin, I'm very sorry for having troubled you. But please don't worry, Su Luo will not be troubling you again in the future!"

Su Luo worked hard to restrain her turbulent emotions. Her tone was steady and unwavering, and her beautiful eyes held a hint of sarcasm.

He was always telling her that he would treat her well; but upon meeting his childhood sweetheart, was she not still immediately discarded?

However beautiful the promise, in the end it was only like this.

Su Luo-ah-Su Luo, in the end what are you feeling so sorrowful about? Was being hurt by Yun Qi in your previous life, not enough? To actually be so naive as to hope that someone who would wholeheartedly treat you well? How

laughable!

Nangong Liuyun quietly watched as Su Luo deliberately distanced herself from him. His expression grew terrifyingly somber, as if he was holding back an invisible anger. However, when he observed her closely, he saw her almost hysterical self-deprecating laugh that made it seem that she was simultaneously crying and laughing. His red lips parted a little as his eyes grew deeply frightening.

In the end, his Adam's apple moved a bit, and he gazed deeply at Su Luo with a frown. "How come you couldn't make others worry less? If anything were to happen to you, how will this king be able to explain this to your Su Manor?"

Su Luo remained where she was, as refined as an ancient Greek sculpture, she emitted a subtle chill from her whole body.

She lifted her gaze towards Nangong Liuyun, coldly smilingly with veiled ridicule. "Doesn't your Highness Prince Jin not know about the situation in Su Manor? If something happened to me, wouldn't it be really advantageous to certain people? They wouldn't have been able to thank you fast enough for it, so how could they even blame you?"

Nangong Liuyun gazed deeply at Su Luo. His lips parted and closed slightly as a solemn, suffocating atmosphere surrounded them in their silence.

Suddenly, Nangong Liuyun's long arm swooped in and brought Su Luo tightly into his arms.

His arms were strong and forceful, his chest was warm and hard, holding her tightly in his embrace. The hold almost squeezed out all of the air from her lungs, nearly suffocating her.

His action was wild, tyrannical and intense; rejection was not an option.

Coming from nowhere, the tight embrace caught Su Luo unprepared. By the time she recovered her composure, she was already imprisoned in his arms, unable to make the slightest move.

He hugged her very, very tightly, and his lanky physique trembled slightly; a hard to suppress moving emotion as if having found the precious treasure he had lost before.

But, was it really possible? The corner of Su Luo's lips lifted in faint irony.

She wanted to push away from him, but found her own strength before this man was comparable to an ant trying to shake a giant tree, unable to move it a single jot.

Nangong Liuyun took unfair advantage of her body and began to kiss her.

Su Luo's heart suddenly blazed with a wave of rage and indignation.

She struggled and turned her face aside, his lips brushing past her cheek.

Angered, Nangong Liuyun bit at her lips again, in a punitive, overbearing manner.

As she gasped in pain, his lively tongue forcibly pried open her teeth and probed the depths within, besieging and plundering her mouth in a willful and ravaging manner.

This kind of kiss, under the watchful eyes of many, made Su Luo feel exceedingly... uncomfortable!

Chapter 112 – A bitter kiss (2)

What kind of relationship did they have? What made Nangong Liuyun think that he could do whatever he wanted with her? Her heart bursting with fury, Su Luo heavily stomped on Nangong Liuyun's foot.

Nangong Liuyun smothered a grunt and his arms encircling her tightened even more. His lips sucked and nibbled hers. Nangong Liuyun continued kissing Su Luo, unmoved by the pain.

Su Luo was so infuriated, she bit him in retaliation!

Scarlet droplets of blood dripped from his lips.

The blood erotically dropped from his thin lips to land on her petal-like ones.

She could taste the scorching heat from the passionate emotions contained within that blood****There were also some hard to describe feelings.

They separated slightly.

Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes that were serene with hidden depths narrowed dangerously. They were fixated on her.

Su Luo coldly widened her own pair of eyes and refusing to back down, confronted the clearly cold and cruel expression within the depths of Nangong Liuyun's eyes directly.

Two pairs of eyes looked at each other, wordless and unspeaking.

Suddenly, like an eagle swooping down from up high, Nangong Liuyun vigorously and commandingly held the back of Su Luo's head, using a large slender hand to forcefully lift up her chin.

He leaned down and forcefully kissed her!

His hot tongue ardently invaded her mouth frantically wreaking havoc, causing

the blood to mix and spread within her mouth.

The metallic and sweet flavor overwhelmed Su Luo's senses. It was as if Nangong Liuyun wanted to use the blood to leave proof of his existence inside her. It also seemed to convey some kind of oath and affidavit of ownership.

His actions were domineering and thoughtless. He kissed her with adamant intensity.

When Su Luo was finally able to liberate her lips, lacking oxygen, she gasped for air using deep breaths. Her cheeks were scarlet. Su Luo felt as if the air she was breathing carried a scalding temperature that was abnormally hot.

Nangong Liuyun's fine, bony hand lifted Su Luo's white jade-like chin. His deep eyes were blurred and carried a trace dejection. "Luo girl, never think about trying to leave this king. Even you won't be able to withstand the consequences of such an action."

The corners of Su Luo's mouth rose into a slight smile. "Leave you? Please enlighten me, Your Highness Prince Jin. When did we get together?"

Her dark eyes were obstinate and unconcerned, as if the kiss just now never happened, leaving her unaffected.

She was still strongly resisting him and wouldn't even acknowledge the relationship between them. This point made Nangong Liuyun especially incensed!

Nangong Liuyun's complexion hazed over, his eyes were menacing, as if he wanted to swallow her whole. He used even more strength to grasp Su Luo's hand. However Su Luo's expression remained unchanged.

Pain!

"You were injured?" A caring expression flashed through Nangong Liuyun's cold, star-like eyes. He hurriedly released Su Luo.

Nangong Liuyun finally noticed that Su Luo's hands had been forcefully bound before, leaving several traces of bruising. The bruises were quite deep, as if the binding had embedded into her flesh. In addition, both her face and body disclosed line after line of lacerations.

These injuries were sufficient to illustrate that within the past day and night, Su Luo had spent the time facing various dangers.

“Who was it?” Nangong Liuyun’s icy cruel eyes that easily captivated people were permeated with an intense rage.

These injuries were clearly man-made and not the work of magical beasts! The fury on his face increased, issuing forth a strong aura of death. His entire person immediately gave off a ruthless, blood-thirsty air like the alluring, cold-blooded Asura shrouded with the darkness of the night.

He was so furious. Was he really concerned about her? Su Luo’s beautiful eyes gave off lights that were like the restless tossing of watery waves, cleverly revolving.

Should she take a risk and bet on it?

“It was...” Su Luo was thinking about telling the truth when she saw the Jade Lake’s fairy soundlessly appear behind Nangong Liuyun.

The Jade Lake’s fairy was still as devastatingly beautiful as before.

She was clothed in a white dress, the color as pure and holy as snow. The hem of the dress lightly danced with the wind. The Jade Lake’s fairy stood there, showing a strong presence. With misty eyes that were like liquid fog, she clearly and calmly looked at Su Luo. Her elegant and extremely beautiful complexion revealed lips pursed in a flowing, shallow smile.

Chapter 113 – A bitter kiss (3)

She looked at Su Luo, and though her smile was broad and her voice clear as she spoke, she still chided Nangong Liuyun, “Third Senior Brother, Miss Su has yet to heal her injuries. It’s better to release her first, and let me take care of the rest.”

Nangong Liuyun’s star-like eyes held a touch of tenderness, elegant clarity and gentle kindness as he nodded and replied, “Yaoyao is right, it was this king who was too impatient.”

Yet, despite having said so, his hold on Su Luo’s hand did not loosen.

Jade Lake’s fairy was like a cold star that stared at those tight interwoven hands in front of her, a cold light flashed within her lovely eyes.

Her simple and neat complexion blossomed with a faint smile, “Oh right. Did Miss Su see any of my maids along the way?”

Su Luo looked at her with a smile full of undisguised mockery.

Jade Lake’s fairy tactic of making the first move, trying to trap her with this dilemma was very clever.

If she admitted that she had seen those maids, then, where were they now? Why did they not appear together with Su Luo?

If she did not admit to seeing them, then, when there was enough evidence to prove that she killed those maids; how would she be able to defend her stance?

Those few words were akin to placing Su Luo on a burning grill while Jade Lake’s fairy, this perpetuator of malicious acts, was simply speculating on the side as she leisurely sipped tea.

Su Luo’s heart grew vigilant. This Jade Lake’s fairy before her not only had

extraordinary looks, her shrewdness in scheming was also by no means average. Otherwise, why would Nangong Liuyun trust her so or give her preferential treatment?

According to Cui Yu, the Jade Lake's fairy had dispatched a total of four maids. The first three had all died in front of Su Luo. As for the last person, she should be the archer, but Su Luo didn't know what had happened to her...

However, before Su Luo could respond.

Suddenly, a black-robed shadow appeared in front of Nangong Liuyun. He reverently and respectfully reported, "Reporting to Master, we found a suspect within the depression on a mountain not far from here. He was carrying this longbow."

The black-robed killer stood with his eyes downcast. He deferentially offered the longbow to Nangong Liuyun with both hands .

This was an exquisitely handcrafted upper grade curved bow, the bow was glowing with a faint luster. One glance and you could tell that it was of considerable value.

"Detain him, and bring him here!" Nangong Liuyun's entire body exuded a strong, imposing, august aura. The depth of his eyes broke out in rage, suffused with evil demonic radiance. His whole person had the appearance of a blood-thirsty monster, savagely cruel and cold. "

Once she saw the person lying down on the ground with eyes tightly shut, Su Luo's eyes slightly creased.

This person turned out to be Liu Weiming.

How could it be him? Su Luo looked towards Jade Lake's fairy with a smile that was not a smile. While the other side merely returned her look with a soft, sweet-tempered smiling expression.

It was as if she was saying that she, the Jade Lake's fairy, was completely unaware of the situation regarding the matter of hunting her down, and it was not her doing.

"Dead?" Nangong Liuyun's pair of icy eyes, the depths of which mesmerized

people, radiated a dense killing intent.

“Yes, by the time we found him, he was already dead.” The black-robed person deferentially responded.

Nangong Liuyun stroked the longbow, probing for traces of the owner. He confirmed that the killer definitely used this bow to kill people, but....

“What could his motive have been to kill her?” Nangong Liuyun had a ferocious appearance, solemn and blood-thirsty.

Qin Ning, who had silently appeared by the Jade Lake fairy’s side, suddenly interjected. “This servant once heard Miss Liu say that they had chased Miss Su to kill her. Miss Su, was this true?”

Wasn’t this implying that only Su Luo would know the motive of why Liu Weiming would want to kill her?

Chapter 114 - A bitter kiss (4)

Su Luo gazed at Qin Ning, a grim smile appeared on the corner of her mouth. The maid at Jade Lake fairy's side was also not so simple.

“Were they hunting you?” Nangong Liuyun's dark eyes became increasingly malicious. His entire person seemed arrogant and aloof, emitting a dense majestic aura.

Su Luo's smile was helpless and stark. “They were not the only group of people that was hunting me.”

What Su Luo just said had a double meaning. She raised an eyebrow and looked at the Jade Lake's fairy with a smile that was not quite a smile. Her gaze landed on the fairy's white, pointed and extremely clever hands.

That final arrow with world-shaking force, could it really have not left a single trace on those pretty hand that were occupied with schemes?

Within just this one day and night, it could be said that she had been surrounded by perils. If it weren't for the goddess of fortune standing on her side; she would have died eighteen thousand times by now.

Today's hatred from being hunted, in the future, she, Su Luo, would absolutely return it tenfold!

At this time, the Jade Lake's fairy had a warm, soft and genial smile on her face. That smile was tranquil and serene, lacking even a ripple on the surface a large body of water, as if she was a fairy from the heavenly realm.

Nangong Liuyun's beautiful icy eyes had a ruthless and savage light, it gazed deeply at Su Luo. Stressing each word he asked. “Who else were among the people trying to kill you?”

Nangong Liuyun, this was what you demanded. It was not something I had

voluntarily tattletaled.

“If I were to say that the Jade Lake fairy’s people were also among them, would you believe me?” Su Luo employed a relaxed and mocking tone, while staring at him with a smile that was not quite a smile.

However, an earnest and cautious expression very quickly passed through Su Luo eyes.

If Nangong Liuyun believed her, then she would decide not to conceal the truth from him. She would reveal everything to him and tell him that his Jade Lake’s fairy was a snake with a scorpion’s vicious poison.

If Nangong Liuyun did not believe her.....Su Luo bleakly forced a bitter smile.

An icy light swiftly flitted through Nangong Liuyun’s hawk-like eyes. He rubbed her head, that pair of red phoenix eyes becoming even more joyous and demonically alluring as they gazed at her. With an indulgent and spoiling manner he said. “Do not joke around, you must tell this king the truth.”

In a split second, Su Luo’s heart immediately dropped to the bottom, it was so cold as to reach the freezing point.

Sure enough, she had expected too much.

As expected, how could a few short days of association compete with the mutual trust developed from growing up together since childhood?

The Jade Lake’s fairy used a sweet-tempered smile to look at her. That pair of sparkling and translucent, jade-like beautiful eyes had a self-satisfied, boastful, gloating laugh in their depths.

As if to say to Su Luo: So what if I dispatched people to kill you? Nangong Liuyun doesn’t believe you. He—absolutely—won’t—believe—it!

Yes, he did not believe it.

Su Luo’s mouth raised with a hint of irony, she forcefully pushed Nangong Liuyun away, in a very light tone and low volume said. “I’m tired, I want to rest.”

Now, what was the point of saying even more? Anyhow, he believed in the Jade Lake’s fairy without any doubt.

Nangong Liuyun saw that she was in a bad mood. He thought it was because she was tired from this one day and night away. So he followed her wish and gently said. “Okay, we’ll rest for one night here, and do our task tomorrow.”

“No need.” Su Luo coldly refused.

The task he was referring to was slaughtering an Armored Back Dragon. Since her space was already opened, there was no need go and kill a dragon.

“Believe in this king, this king will definitely find the culprit!” Nangong Liuyun watched her back as she determinedly walked away, his sharp eyebrows were low. His voice was firm as if swearing an oath.

Su Luo mouth rose with a slight bitterness,

Find the killer? I had even told you who it was, yet you won’t believe me. How will you find the killer then?

Su Luo’s footsteps paused. She glanced back with a shallow smile, her smile was like that of March’s fireworks, dazzling and lonely. In a clear and indifferent voice, she said “Really, then I’ll first thank you”

Nangong Liuyun firmly watched her leaving figure from the back. His face was indeterminately flickering between clear and overcast, suddenly dark then bright. The veins of his knuckles tightened until they burst.

“Third senior brother.....” the Jade Lake fairy’s charmingly gentle and beautiful eyes were like mist moving slightly, she somewhat hesitantly stared at Nangong Liuyun.” Do you believe me?”

~~~~~

message from the REAL Chinese author: As for this emotional drama scene, after it is done, my speed in writing will rapidly speed up  
—message from Muffin (to readers): this isn’t a message from translators, it’s the A-U-T-H-O-R, not us, so don’t complain if you don’t see 1500 chapters a day. Bye bye and yeah in other words we will continue normal pace.

# Chapter 115 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (1)

---

Nangong Liuyun's pair of star-shaped eyes were as cold as ice. He shot a piercing, penetrating glance at the Jade Lake's fairy. The chilly and desolate air emitting from his body was very thick. After a long pause, the corner of his mouth lifted into a brilliant but still thinly cold smile. He merely said, "go back."

He had already turned to leave before the sound of his words reached her.

"Third senior brother..." the Jade Lake's fairy bit her lips and tugged on the hem of Nangong Liuyun's wide cloak. Her eyes were misty with tears, giving off a lovely yet woeful appearance.

Nangong Liuyun's hand covered her slender white hands and harshly dislodged them.

Without even turning his head, using large strides he departed. His figure from the back was very decisive and determined.

Concealed by her sleeves, the veins in the Jade Lake fairy's hands violently started to burst. Her beautiful eyes also became malicious and a fierce, venomous killing intent flashed within their depths.

"Young Mistress. Tonight, do you want this servant to—?" Qin Ning whispered while making a slitting throat gesture as she quietly approached the Jade Lake fairy's side.

The Jade Lake fairy's eyes erupted like a volcano spewing out molten lava. Her palm directly slapped Qin Ning's face. "The best opportunity was wasted by you. Once we return, go to the Punishment Hall to receive your penance."

This slap contained the force of Heaven and Earth, it was so severe that it had sent Qin Ning flying. Once she tumbled to the ground, Qin Ning immediately

passed out.

The Jade Lake fairy flung her sleeves then walked off with an formidable aura of death.

That same night, the Jade Lake's fairy took her group of people and left. They decamped, leaving everything so clean and neat it was as if they had never been.

That group of black-robed people had also evacuated neatly without leaving a trace behind.

On the horse carriage that was returning, one more person had been added. The added person was Ling Feng.

He was Nangong Liuyun's hidden bodyguard. Normally, he would stealthily protect Nangong Liuyun.

The Dragon Scaled Horse ran like the wind.

Su Luo was seated inside the carriage in a resting position with her back facing Nangong Liuyun and eyes closed.

This type of posture was a deliberate snub, rejecting all conversation.

Her expression was nonchalant, like clouds on the horizon. It was so remote and distant, making Su Luo seem unreachable.

Nangong Liuyun's expression was brooding. as his complexion slowly darkened.

Su Luo was attempting to straighten her body when suddenly a large shadow enveloped her entire person.

She unconsciously opened her eyes.

Before Su Luo could focus, unexpectedly she was confined within Nangong Liuyun's embrace. His slender fingers glided over her face and paused between her lips.

Her lips were exceptionally beautiful. They were light in color, moist and plump, evoking the phrase 'suitable to be kissed'.

Nangong Liuyun leaned down. His beautiful, perfect, and thin lips kissed Su Luo's lightly colored lips.

But, Su Luo firmly pushed him away.

“Are you still blaming this king?” Nangong Liuyun asked in a low voice, his scorching gaze fixated on her.

Su Luo was wordlessly silent.

“Angry at this king for abandoning you that day?” Nangong Liuyun’s voice was clearly cold.

Su Luo remained silent.

Within the carriage, there was a period of silence.

After what seemed to be a long time, Nangong Liuyun delivered some words in explanation. “She and this king grew up together. She saved this king’s life once. There are some matters that you don’t understand and are unlikely to understand...”

Su Luo opened her eyes and shot him an offhand glance. All of a sudden, the corner of her mouth hooked into a taunting smile and she asked in a contrary manner, “Right, how could I blame you?”

What Nangong Liuyun intended to say was choked off by her words. A look of astonishment containing complicated feelings flashed across his eyes. This prompted him to return to his frequent habit of staring at Su Luo.

Su Luo lifted her eyebrows, giving him a smile that was not a smile. “What qualifications do I have to blame you? Like you said, the two of you have been together since childhood. You are childhood sweethearts with mutual trust. You have saved each other’s lives. We are only strangers who came together by chance and have between us a few short days of friendship. Therefore, how could I blame you?”

## Chapter 116 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (2)

---

In a split second, Nangong Liuyun's complexion became exceptionally unsightly. His ten fingers were intercrossed together, entire body was icy-cold and blood-thirsty. He was seething with anger.

“Could it be what I said was wrong?” Su Luo heedlessly watched him, the corner of her mouth perked up in a light, nonchalant smile. “You guys are childhood sweethearts, while we are merely nodding acquaintances. It's obvious which is important and which is not with just a glance. How could it be wrong that you elected to save her? If I were you, I would choose to save her too.”

“Acquaintances?” Nangong Liuyun's phoenix eyes narrowed.

“Or are we not even considered acquaintances?” Su Luo seem to be infuriating him for her own enjoyment.

Nangong Liuyun's rage burned up, his face became grim. His long and thin fingers pinched at her neck even though his smile was tender and soft as water (1). His single-minded devoted expression was simply touching. “Su Luo, do you believe that this king will put you to death?”

The man leaning over was like Satan and could make one's heart full of fearful thoughts. However Su Luo knew she could not yield. Once she gives in, it would be like being submerged in an endless abyss. She would completely lose herself.

Su Luo stubbornly meet his eyes head on. The corner of her mouth rose and a vague flowery smiling countenance appeared. “Just because I refused you, was that the reason you want to put me to death? His highness the legendary Prince Jin still amounts to nothing more than this!”

**“Luo Luo, you better not challenge the bottom line of this king’s patience.” Nangong Liuyun bent one knee, semi-kneeling leaning into her. Tenderness, dizziness, and puzzlement in a blink of an eyes, those emotions passed through the eyes fixed on her. “That kind of consequence is not something you will be able to bear.”**

**“Really? What type of consequences? I really would want to try it.” She confronted Nangong Liuyun’s tender and soft as water expression that concealed a vengeful blood-thirstiness. A touch of fear passed through Su Luo’s heart, nevertheless she unhesitantly counterattacked.**

**“Su Luo don’t tell me you don’t know. This king had already decided that Prince Jin’s wife and princess is you. I will never let you go.” As if Nangong Liuyun was making a vow, his beautiful eyes were tender and soft as water. A gorgeous smile on his face his voice was gentle and soft like a feather floating by. “Therefore don’t try to refuse or even flee, or you can only get hurt.”**

**“Haha, really funny.” Su Luo focused on his gaze, as if wanting to know how he will hurt her.**

**Nangong Liuyun’s authority had suffered a provoking blow, yet he laughed in a matchless gorgeous manner.**

**He was at the pinnacle of pure, sinister darkness, from the moment he meet her. He never intended to set her free. This was a type of obsession.**

**He had an obsession and the formidable capital to carry out his desires.**

**He even started to consider, if he should, in order to keep her by his side, break off her wings or join in helping her soar higher with her talent.**

**A choice, at this point, with no foreseeable outcome.**

**Right now, she could only see that his face and everything else was being turned upside down as quickly as lightning. He cruelly bit her lip!**

**This time’s Nangong Liuyun seem to be possessed by the soul of a devil, remote and wildly ruthless.**

**He fiercely dug open her teeth, and violently laid siege to the gap between her lips and teeth (2). Arousing the strong passions like those experienced**

during a perilous situation!

“Oh——”Su Luo had no time to react before being assaulted. Once she came to her senses, she discovered that he had a iron grip on the back of her head, and her entire body was covered by his. She couldn't move the slightest bit.

This was too much! What gives him the right to do whatever he pleases with her? Obviously the one who abandoned her was him. Clearly he choose to believe his childhood sweetheart. Now what reason does he have to show off such love towards her and pressured her so she can't reject it?

If Su Luo was a regular woman than fine, but she definitely wasn't.

In her past life, she was a famous gold metal level assassin, she dealt with the underground dark world all year round. The words being wronged and bullied can not possibly exist when talking about her.

*1) tender and soft as water: Chinese idiom for deeply attached to someone.*

*2) lips and teeth: Chinese idiom with figurative meaning of close partners or interdependent.*

# Chapter 117 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (3)

---

Fury flashed through Su Luo's heart. She swung a fist containing all the power in her body and smashed it with as much force as she could toward Nangong Liuyun's five viscera and six bowels (1)!

This fist contained all her strength!

Nangong Liuyun let out a groan and suddenly loosened his grip.

Su Luo's face was full of indignation and fury, so she did not carefully look at him. She ruthlessly pushed him away. She turned around, lifted the curtain and jumped out of the carriage in a rage!

His horse carriage was not the only one on the road back to the capital. Even if it was the only one, she, Su Luo, would rather use her own pair of legs to walk back. She would definitely not trouble him again!

Panting with rage, Su Luo turned on her heels and walked away.

She had not noticed the peculiarity of Nangong Liuyun's appearance then.

After being pushed aside, Nangong Liuyun hit the carriage wall, and his complexion became as pale as paper. His right hand was pressed to his chest. His smooth and slender fingers could not stop trembling...

"Luo Luo——" He opened the carriage curtains, and sickly called out.

Su Luo did not even bother to turn her head. Her back was cold and determined.

Suddenly she heard the sound of a heavy weight fall to the ground behind her, along with Ling Feng's anxious cry.

Su Luo stopped her footsteps, thought about it, and ultimately decided to glance back.

Just one look made her deeply purse her brows.

She unexpectedly saw the god-like Nangong Liuyun's entirely battered and exhausted body tumble to the ground.

On his white brocade robe, his chest area was full stained with fresh blood. His originally handsomely-sculpted, tall and straight body now seem extremely weak, like glass that would shatter with one touch.

His former dark red lips were tainted with blood, it was devilishly alluring and wildly untamed.

Now with difficulty he propped himself up, a pair of beautiful eyes dim as frost. Even though he was pale and weak his stared deeply at Su Luo with a demonically charming expression.

His pair of eyes were fixed straight at Su Luo since the beginning, and he remained silent not speaking a word.

His pitch-black inky eyes held a deep meaning, making Su Luo's heart throb incessantly.

Nangong Liuyun, what is wrong with him....how did he suddenly become so weak?

Su Luo looked at her own pair of hands with a confounded expression. Right now she shouldn't be strong enough to hit Nangong Liuyun until he spit out blood right?

Suddenly Nangong Liuyun's entire body seem to be possessed by a litany of evil, vampiric spirits. Cold sweat poured from his face, his complexion immediately became deathly pale.

His entire body began to shake and tremble. His scarlet, snowy lips instantly became purple and bruised. He grinded his teeth and tightly shut his mouth as if unable to suppress a large power was about to surge out!

"Not good! His Highness is about to go into Recoil of Madness (2)!" As His Highness Prince Jin's personal bodyguard, Ling Feng was so terrified that his

hands and foot had gone soft.

His Highness Prince Jin was someone they all worshiped and believed in. If he lives, then the Tigerwolf Regiment lives. He dies, then the Tigerwolf Regiment would be exterminated!

Therefore, nothing must happen to high highness Prince Jin!

Ling Feng's complexion changed fluctuated, one moment it was pale and another it was ashen. He looked back and fiercely glared at Su Luo and sternly said. "His Highness is about to into Recoil of Madness, quickly come back and help!"

This woman! She actually hit His Highness until he was about to into Recoil of Madness! Right now Ling Feng was itching to kill Su Luo with one palm strike.

A touch of confusion appeared in Su Luo's eyes. How could she have the strength to hit Nangong Liuyun into Recoil of Madness? How powerful was Nangong Liuyun's strength compared to how powerful her strength was?

This person was speaking nonsense!

Seeing Su Luo's disbelief, Ling Feng was about to die from anger. He loudly shouted at Su Luo. "Because His Highness wanted to save you, he broke protocol and sent the signal to summon the Tigerwolf Regiment to come. Because His Highness wanted to see you earlier, originally he could have break through and advanced another rank; but by forcibly stopping the process, he maimed his own body to the point where his five viscera and six bowls were nearly dislocated. Not to mention His Highness's battle with the vulture king, where his internal injury was so heavy that he almost died from the wounds."

*1) five viscera and six bowels is used for Chinese medicine studies. The five viscera refers to heart, liver, lungs, spleen and kidney. The six bowls are the hollow organs such as; gallbladder, stomach, large intestine, small intestine, the triple focus (probably the cavity) and bladder.*

*2) The Chinese phrase is 走火入魔 literally translated as enter fire and pass magic. This happens when something goes wrong during cultivation or practice of martial arts. The person with this condition goes insane or die. Thank you all*

*for vote...Decided to combine the best suggestion and top votes into Recoil of Madness.*

# Chapter 118 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (4)

---

Ling Feng's pair of eyes were red with rage, it was as if he wanted to swallow Su Luo whole. He pointed at Su Luo and loudly snarled. "His Highness in order to not make you anxious continuously pretended that nothing was wrong with him. You, however! You actually returned all his good intentions with such a heavy blow! I really don't understand why His Highness would love such a malicious woman!"

Su Luo was dazed by Ling Feng's denunciation.

She blankly stared at Ling Feng. Every sentence and every word that he said whirled around in her mind.

Nangong Liuyun in that battle had unexpectedly suffered a serious injury. Furthermore, in order to save her, he had repeatedly sustained even more injuries? How could this be....

Ling Feng's bloodshot eyes quickly glared at Su Luo. His hands wiped away the liquid that had squeezed out of his eyes.

"Blagh——" Nangong Liuyun could not suppress it anymore and a mouthful of blood wildly sprayed out.

Su Luo was terrified to the point of becoming paralyzed.

She quickly walked forward and with one knee bend kneeled in front of him. An apprehensive panic that never appeared before, flashed through her eyes.

"What to do? What should we do?" Su Luo gazed at Nangong Liuyun's chest. That area was blooming like a red spider lily, the pretty and flirtatious red color was spreading. It rapidly saturated the white brocade robe, leaving a dark pattern.

Scarlet liquid drop by drop fell from his lightly-colored thin lips in quick succession.

The vicious, dense blood on his chest saturated the air. The smell of blood immediately assaulted her nose as it engulfed his entire body.

However, Nangong Liuyun seemed to be completely unaware of the pain. His eyes were diluted like the mist. A smiling expression was hanging from the corner of his mouth. Within Nangong Liuyun's black eyes was an endless, deep abyss. His entire body gave off a flirtatious and enticing manner that was strangely pessimistic and full of despair at the same time. He carried a strong air of self abandonment and self destructiveness while still being incomparably handsome.

Nangong Liuyun's current state terrified and alarmed Su Luo, but it also made her heart beat faster.

The rims of Su Luo's eyes gradually become moist....

How could this have happened? This was not what she wanted. Su Luo had never thought that she could injure Nangong Liuyun so severely. She had been enraged when she had smashed him with her fist. She had never imagined that he could be wounded so profoundly!

Su Luo's eyes misted over and she repeatedly shook her head. She wanted to tell him that she had not done it on purpose. In a moment of rage, she had spoken irresponsibly and hit him. In the future, she wouldn't dare to do it again.

Unexpectedly, Nangong Liuyun dropped down on one knee and knelt in front of Su Luo. He wrapped his hands tightly around hers. Because he was doing his best to ignore the pain, the blue veins on the back of Nangong Liuyun's smooth white hands popped out. His hands trembled faintly.

Nangong Liuyun was quite unaware of how scary his current appearance was. His pair of beautiful and flirtatious eyes gazed at Su Luo in a tender and soft manner. He started to smile even though he lacked body heat. Nangong Liuyun's demeanor sent a message, that even if the entire world collapsed in front of him in the next second, he would not even furrow an eyebrow.

He determinedly and gently looked at Su Luo. “This is your last chance, Luo Luo. If you stay, from now on you will never be able to leave.”

Su Luo could only shake her head. She wanted to apologize. She wanted to say ‘I’m sorry’, but it was as if her throat had been pinched closed. No matter how she tried, she could not make a sound.

“Have you completely vented your anger?” Nangong Liuyun’s smile was very light. It resembled the clouds on the horizon, unattainable and out of reach.

Not waiting for Su Luo to answer, Nangong Liuyun once again started to speak. “In the event that your heart is still incensed...I will give you another opportunity.” From his sleeves, he unexpectedly took out a dagger. He stuffed it into Su Luo’s hand and determinedly looked at her.

Ling Feng was immediately scared out of his mind.

“Your Highness!” That dagger could kill with a single blow. In addition, it was coated with a highly toxic poison. With just a slight touch on skin, a rot will spread through the entire body. Anyone affected would be entirely beyond saving.

“Who allowed you to speak?! Scram!” Nangong Liuyun had always treated other people without the slightest restraint, his behavior always oppressive and unpredictable.

In a split second, it seemed as if time froze.

Regarding His Highness Prince Jin, Ling Feng was already accustomed to following his orders. Prince Jin’s every word, sentence, and action had already been ingrained as orders in the minds of his followers since long ago to the point that complying without question had become a reflex.

# Chapter 119 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (5)

---

To comply with him, to obey him, it seemed to have already become intuitive. An instinct, so natural that it seemed have been carved into one's flesh and blood.

To resist His Highness Prince Jin required a great deal of courage.

Ling Feng bit his lip. Furious, he closed his mouth and stood aside.

Since ancient times, beautiful women have been the source of numerous calamities! The ancients were right in this regard, they didn't deceive me! Lin Feng's eyes were bloodshot, and both of his hands were clenched into fists. With his eyes as cold as ice, he heartlessly stared at Su Luo.

Nangong Liuyun stuffed the dagger into Su Luo's hand, his laugh which was like a soft cloud and a gentle wind in the clear sky, it was also flirtatious and threatening. His finger pointed at his own chest, and he softly coaxed her: "Come, stab here, stabbing here will let you vent your anger. Be obedient."

His facial expression was unperturbed and lacked any emotion. His hands unyieldingly detained Su Luo's hand, not allowing any room for resistance.

Su Luo was both scared and angry, and involuntarily cried out. "Nangong Liuyun, enough! Seriously enough! Quickly stay your hands!"

Nangong Liuyun, with a deathly tight grip, held her hand. The corner of his mouth rose as he laughed in a flirtatious and enticing manner, tranquil and intoxicating like the cherry blossoms in March. He wouldn't let her refuse, gripping the wrist of her hand that held the dagger, the blade tip was directed towards his own heart.

"You know, when I, Nangong Liuyun, do things, there has never been a person

who would dare utter half a sentence of criticism, and I have also never cared about other people's opinions. However, you, Su Luo, are an exception." Nangong gripped her hand securely, his eyes gave off an ice-cold aura, "You can retaliate. Come. Come, vent your anger."

Nangong Liuyun's pitch-black eyes stared at her, looking deep into her eyes. He took her hands, with the dagger blade tip aimed towards his own heart, and positioned it at the most fatal point.

No matter how high your martial skill was, the heart was always the the most fatal location. With one knife stab at it, even the most powerful martial arts expert will die.

He tightly clutched her hand. His demeanor was calm, his expression blank, drawing nearer bit by bit. He was very overbearing, forcing her to kill him.

Su Luo repeatedly shook her head, and she did everything to pry away her hands from his hold. She was mouthing I'm sorry, I'm sorry that I treated you badly, I'm sorry... Su Luo's heart repeated these 'I'm sorry's' ten thousand times, but she was unable to speak a single word.

However, Nangong Liuyun turned a deaf ear, and just laughed indifferently. His smile was like the fireworks in March, gorgeous yet lonely.

The depths of his eyes were clearly laughing, but his pupils outwardly showed incomparable indifference.

He caressed Su Luo's face, calling her name. "I, Nangong Liuyun, have never been sincere towards anyone, except for you..."

After barely finished speaking, his eyes flashed with a ruthless light. He strongly pressed down on her hands and thrust towards his own chest!

Tears suddenly rushed out of Su Luo's eyes with a -sob-sound.

This person was really a demon!

Being ruthless to others was one thing, but he was actually also so heartless to himself!

At the last moment, Su Luo used all her strength to make the thrusting dagger slant sideways. It stabbed towards an indentation on his shoulder where his

collarbone was, barely avoiding the fatal location of his heart.

She watched him collapse and saw he was close to being suffocated. It seemed as if he didn't even have the strength to keep his eyelids open, yet he was still using his deep and intense eyes to unblinkingly stare at her while smiling.

Su Luo tightly clenched her fist; in a flash, she understood.

Nangong Liuyun was using his life to scheme against her, little by little pressing harder, constantly trapping her!

He was taking a gamble!

He was betting that at the last crucial moment, she would force him to avoid the fatal point. He was betting that she, Su Luo, could not bear to see him die. He was betting that she, Su Luo, actually had a thread of affection toward him!

He was this kind of man. His heart was scheming, sophisticatedly shrewd, and calculative. He also had formidable power as well as endless capital. The type of man that he was, even if he gave a certain woman an opportunity, she would never be able to escape.

He said that she was an exception.

Could it be that even after so many years, she was the only one who had been given this choice?

In Su Luo's mind, suddenly lightly floated the image of that simple and neat beautiful woman who could overturn a country.

Could it be that he never gave the Jade Lake's Fairy a chance?

## Chapter 120 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (6)

---

“Apparently you still have not vented all the anger in your heart girl.” Nangong Liuyun looked at her while smiling. He saw her expression continued to change, and his eyes were gentle, flirtatious and compelling. “Is it still not enough? Then do you want to try again? Will you stab it in from here? Or there? Or maybe here?”

“Nangong Liuyun, stop acting crazy! Hurry up and release my hand! Do you hear me!” Su Luo stared at him with a complicated look. If he was not so weak and pale, she would have definitely slapped him like how she did before.

Why was he using his own life to pressure her?!

If it was possible, she really wanted to turn around and leave. To abandon this man who detached any value from his own life. Let him fend for himself, self-destruct through madness and then perish.

But she couldn't, because she had saddled herself with the guilt of causing him to go into Recoil of Madness in the first place.

“Do you forgive me now?” Nangong Liuyun was panting. His handsome countenance was sweating profusely, but he still looked at her seriously.

“I.....” Su Luo glared at him coldly. Her eyes swept across the bloody dagger, the blood color emitted a strange cold light under the sun. Su Luo's heart throbbed in an unexpected coincidence, she roared at him. “Forgive! I forgive you!”

She knew, if she dared to say “I never blamed you” those words, next time, if it wasn't him strangling her, then it would be her forcefully strangling him.

Because those two sentences, the meaning contained within was not the

same. "I never blamed you," meant, "I never cared about you in the first place," which is why she wouldn't blame him.

This man, in regards to reading people's intent through language, was likely to nitpick her answer down to the tiniest details.

"Then....that's....good..." A trace of satisfaction flashed through Nangong Liuyun's waning but smiling expression. It seemed as if he was forcefully enduring everything until this moment. He finally relaxed and afterwards immediately collapsed to the ground.

"Nangong Liuyun!" Su Luo hastily caught and held on to him while frantically shouting out loud.

Cold sweat covered Nangong Liuyun's face who had collapsed into her embrace. His lips were purple and black. His entire body appeared to have been immersed in icy water and was covered in a layer of sweat. Su Luo was clearly able to sense he had already lost consciousness. However his body still repeatedly shivered from head to toe and remained unable to suppress the repeated trembles.

Just now, even though he was in this condition he had still stubbornly propped himself up to compel her to kill him!

Su Luo was not afraid to meet a fiercely cruel person. However a person who could be so fiercely cruel to such an extent, even on themselves was a person worth dreading!

"It's all because of you! If it was not for you, his highness would never end up this way!" When Ling Feng saw Nangong Liuyun faint, he ran to his side without delay. While scrambling to snatch Nangong Liuyun's body from her he was also raised his head and loudly bellowed at Su Luo.

Su Luo's blood and qi was boiling from being yelled by him, a mouthful of blood almost bursted out.

She clenched her teeth and was finally able to swallow the sweet and metallic taste. Coldly responded to Ling Feng. "What's the point of yelling at me now! The most important thing is to think of a way to save him! I'm not familiar with this ! Now it all depends on you!"

Ling Feng's pair of eyes were crimson and bloodshot, similar to a trapped ferocious beast. He threw a deadly glare at Su Luo. Hugging Nangong Liuyun's body, he got on the Dragon Scaled Horse. He sat on top of the carriage, raised his horsewhip and was just about to leave.

He thought about it, still in the end his patience he shouted towards Su Luo. "Time is running out. Quickly, get in the carriage!"

If he considered only his original desires, he would naturally want to abandon Su Luo. The further he left her the better. However Ling Feng was not a fool. He had realized deep-down that Su Luo had a special status within Nangong Liuyun's heart. That area was a place that even the Jade Lake's fairy had never touched before.

If his highness was to wake up and not see Su Luo, this evildoer, what terrible things would happen if he went out, once again, to find her!

For the time being, Su Luo completely disregarded Ling Feng's nasty attitude. She was only worried about Nangong Liuyun. If he met any misfortune because of her, she would blame herself and be mournful for the rest of her life.

Therefore, without another word Su Luo jumped into the carriage and said to Ling Feng. "Quickly, lets go!"

# Chapter 121 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (7)

---

It seemed even the Dragon Scaled Horse had sensed its owner's weakening breath and it neighed agitatedly. Casting out its hooves, it bolted forward.

At that moment, the Dragon Scaled Horse's running speed was comparable to flying.

Within the carriage, Su Luo tightly hugged the unconscious body of Nangong Liuyun which was starting to stiffen. Her heart was filled with extreme regret!

If... if she had not punched him with her fist, would the result have been different?

Nangong Liuyun, nothing bad must happen to you...

A single teardrop silently fell onto and rolled down Nangong Liuyun's bloodstained face, leaving behind a clear white streak.

In less than two hours, the Dragon Scaled Horse pulled to a stop at the entrance of a lavish manor.

Ling Feng hurriedly jumped off the carriage.

Having seen the Dragon Scaled Horse's approach, a steward had already excitedly rushed out from within the manor.

The steward was around fifty years old. He had eyes that were both bright and alert, and a physique that was straight and strong. One could tell at a glance that he was a martial artist, and not a weak one at that.

He saw Ling Feng and his expression flashed a trace of excitement. "Has His Highness arrived?"

Ling Feng anxiously shouted: “His Highness is injured! Stop tarrying and quickly come help!”

Obviously, this lavish and ornate manor was for Nangong Liuyun’s private use.

Hearing this, Steward Xu was instantly horrified!

His Highness Prince Jin was injured? His Highness Prince Jin could actually be injured? With His Highness Prince Jin’s level of martial arts proficiency, how could he be injured? Steward Xu felt that this was simply too preposterous.

However, when he saw Ling Feng hurriedly jump out of the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage, while carrying the bloodsoaked body of Prince Jin, he felt his heart would stop beating.

“What-What happened to His Highness? Who was it!” Steward Xu’s eyes flashed with alarm and anger.

Ling Feng bitterly glared at Su Luo but kept his silence. He lengthened his strides to dash into the house instead.

Su Luo’s body was covered with Nangong Liuyun’s blood, and thus at the moment, looked a little pitiful. Calmly, she nodded towards Steward Xu: “Hurry and get the best doctor to come. His Highness Prince Jin has gone into the Recoil of Madness.”

When Steward Xu saw Su Luo, his prideful ability to keep calm disappeared, he could not help widening his pair of eyes in shock.

All who served by His Highness’s side knew that His Highness was extremely fastidious, and that no one was allowed within one meter of his whole body, especially women!

This Dragon Scaled Horse carriage, other than Ling Feng who drove it, no one else was allowed to enter.

However, when he lifted the carriage curtain earlier, he clearly saw His Highness collapsed in her arms... .. His Highness had actually allowed this Miss to get close to him? To ride in the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage, which even the Jade Lake’s fairy was not allowed to enter?

Immediately, the way Steward Xu looked at Su Luo changed. It no longer

contained a guarded precaution towards outsiders. His present gaze even held a thread of deferential humility.

“Miss, how may I address you?”

“Su.” Su Luo replied plainly.

“Miss Su, sorry to trouble you, but please enter and take care of His Highness. Ling Feng may not be able to give him proper care with his rough manner. This old servant will now go and invite the best Apothecary!” Steward Xu nodded solemnly towards Su Luo before he turned away and left taking great strides.

To suffer Recoil of Madness during cultivation, a general doctor, no matter how brilliant, could do nothing. He could only seek an Apothecary’s help in this matter.

Within this Nanming prefecture, lived an Advanced Apothecary.

Not to mention in the small Nanming prefecture, even within the entire Eastern Ling Empire and on the whole continent, Advanced Apothecaries were very rare.

Steward Xu knew that this legendary Advanced Apothecary was eccentric, arrogant and temperamental, almost to the point of making people bitterly detest him.

# Chapter 122 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (8)

---

Unless one had a heavenly treasure that could move him, such as the precious and rare Primeval Pill Recipes, getting him to act would be, difficult... extremely difficult.

If his highness Prince Jin's name was used to accomplish this... no, it would be inappropriate. He would not even dignify to the King's request with an answer, much less entertain His Highness Prince Jin. Not to mention, with so many enemies out there after His Highness Prince Jin's life, if the news of his Highness's injury were to leak out, that would far from being good!

If it was in the capital, Prince Jin's manor had countless rare treasures. But here in the Nanming Prefecture, the treasures that could be counted were far from sufficient.

Steward Xu's heart was anxious and apprehensive, yet he could only retrieve the most precious treasures from within the warehouse. He left in a hurry with an escort party towards the Apothecary's estate.

Su Luo tailed after Ling Feng in the direction he flew with a surprisingly fast speed.

When she arrived, she saw two rows of uniformed guards outside the room. Every one of them bore a similar expression and movements; solemn, majestic, their imposing manner was intimidating and emitted a fully oppressive atmosphere.

Su Luo was stopped outside the door.

Ling Feng hollered out. "Throw her in here!"

Even though Ling Feng was very worried, he had not completely lost his mind

yet. Although he was very unwilling to let Su Luo near his own master, it was already obvious that only with her around, would his Highness fight to live.

Such a discovery would drive people mad! Accordingly, Ling Feng had become so depressed that he started to pull out his own hair!

Su Luo completely was unaware of Ling Feng's inner conflict. When she entered, she discovered that Ling Feng had already placed Nangong Liuyun in bed.

On the sickbed, Nangong Liuyun's eyes were tightly closed.

His eyes when open were sharp and abstruse, cold and steady; but now they were tightly shut. Despite his vulnerability, his current appearance still gave off a strong enough aura to make people tremble with fear.

His red lips were alluring and formed a picturesque face that could grace a painting.

Hot, fresh blood dyed his white robe, and the outside of his cheeks, from his neck down, was dotted with bloodstains.

The him right now, although frail and pale, still leaked out the same formidable domineering air as before.

"You do it!" Ling Feng's hands held a piece of embroidered cloth, and, with a with a trace of anger, he tossed it to Su Luo.

His highness Prince Jin was very mysophobia. Even though he had followed at his highness's side for more than ten years, he still had to maintain a distance of one meter from his highness's body. Just now, when he carried his highness inside, it was due to a moment of desperation and because he saw no other option.

However, this evildoer, Su Luo, was different. His Highness would probably be more than eager to have her get closer to him, right?! Ling Feng hatefully thought.

Su Luo held the soft, clean towel and slowly walked to Nangong Liuyun's side. Sitting by his bedside, she silently gazed at him.

The ever noble, conceited and icily-cold Highness Prince Jin now appeared to

be painfully suffering in a deep abyss. He appeared to be very pitiable and his current condition could not help but make people's hearts soften.

Her cool, jade-like slender fingers brushed away a few strands of hair on his forehead and delicately, using the soft towel, wiped clean, centimeter by centimeter, the blood that covered his skin. That pure white jade like radiant skin, little by little regained its glittering splendor in the wake of her towel.

But, he remained unconscious, and his body was like an block of shifting ice, entirely stiff as iron and continuously shivering. As if he was so cold, he could pass away at any moment.

“Why has the Apothecary not come yet?! His Highness can't hold on any longer!” Ling Feng was so worried that both his eyes became red. He then resolutely spoke to Su Luo, “Take good care of His Highness! I'll go out return quickly!”

He said what he needed to say, and without waiting for Su Luo's reply, his silhouette had already disappeared from where he was standing.

Su Luo secretly reasoned that, Ling Feng was an expert, and not just any expert; but one who was second only to Nangong Liuyun.

Suddenly, she felt something lock around her hand. Looking down once more, she discovered Nangong Liuyun's bony and smooth hand tightly griped around hers.

# Chapter 123 – Infuriated to the point of discarding all rational thoughts (9)

---

The large pool of blood on his chest was like an extremely beautiful decoration, gaudy and unpleasant to her eyes. It painfully stung her vision and left traces of moisture upon the rims of her eyes.

He tightly gripped Su Luo's right hand. His joints used all its strength to press down. Just a little more and the strength of the grip could almost cut off her wrist.

Painful; it really was painful.

Su Luo pursed her lips. It was so agonizing that Su Luo felt as if his grip would tighten until all her veins burst. She lowered her head and looked down. She saw the color of her veins rapidly retreat leaving the skin blanched white. Nangong Liuyun's grip was so tight that his fingers seem to have entered her flesh.

To use such strength.

Su Luo was in so much pain that she was completely numb.

However, her mouth was tightly closed, and she dared not speak a word, let alone to risk reminding him to release her hand.

Su Luo understood that right now he was in a lot of pain.

He was in so much pain that he had fainted, but he continued to suffer in agony.

The amount of pain he was currently enduring was greater than hers by thousands-no ten thousand times. And she knew she was the cause this evil that plagued him. How could she cry out and complain about pain in front of him?

If it could ease some of her guilt then she wished the pain would be even more fierce and severe.

Therefore her pure white wrist was almost squeezed until the bones shattered, and her entire body trembled from the agony, however she remained motionless. Her other hand steadily moved slowly, and little by little it wiped clean the jade-like skin on his face. She wiped away the large amount of cold sweat that were pouring out.

Whenever she finished cleaning off the current layer of sweat another layer would swiftly cover his face.

His jaw was tightly clenched, and his lower lip was being bitten until the blood slowly flowed down.

A trace of pain crossed Su Luo's heart. Such thin, good-looking lips shaped to perfection. It's such a pity to damage it.....without thinking Su Luo extended her finger to prop open his jaw.

Pain....in a split second Su Luo's long, shapely eyebrows tensed, her body however was still fixed in place, motionless.

Only until this moment was she able to deeply feel how deep was his pain.

When Ling Feng entered, this was the exquisite scene that stood frozen in time for him to see.

He saw Su Luo's hand that was blanched white from being squeezed, with wrist bones close to shattering, as well as her other hand that was bitten until it was dripping blood. A thread of astonishment flashed through the depths of his eyes, and it was followed by a clear understanding of what had really transpired.

Since the first time they met he had always been harsh, unreasonable, and critical of Su Luo. Her very appearance would cause his eyebrows to stand and furrow at her. However he no longer had the malice and the provocation as before. This was something that was spread afterwards.

When Ling Feng quietly retreated outside, he saw Xu San hastened over. Behind him followed an elderly man with white hair. Following closely at the heels of the elderly man was a small child with a medicine box.

A chill flashed through Ling Feng's eyes, he grabbed Xu San the third's shirt collar. "Where is the one with surname of Leng?"

Didn't they go to invite the Advanced Apothecary Leng Yan? How come the person that came was not him?

Xu San's entire face was pale, he felt sad and helpless. "Steward Xu stayed behind at Master Leng's manor, but nobody even saw a trace of Master Leng! Steward Xu was helpless and had no other choice but to send us to invite Apothecary Zuo here first."

Apothecary Zuo was an intermediate Apothecary, which was one level lower than Leng Yan. However now they could only invite him first to have a look, Steward Xu was still trying to think of ideas over at Leng manor.

After Apothecary Zuo entered, he checked his pulse, then meticulously and carefully examined him. He frowned, then said to Ling Feng and Su Luo. "This is too serious, this old man has not the slightest confidence of a cure. It's better to invite Apothecary Leng over to take a look."

"If we were able to invite him over, why would we invite you!?" Ling Feng did not give him any face and immediately became angry.

His Highness Prince Jin's injury almost drove him insane, like the roars of a trapped beast. At any time, he was prepared to pounce toward an enemy.

Apothecary Zuo was also a little helpless. Who told him that he would be so lacking in ability before the current situation?

Su Luo watched Nangong Liuyun continuously shivering on the bed, frowned and asked. "What would we need to invite that Apothecary Leng over here?"

## Chapter 124 – To adapt to one’s taste (1)

---

“Difficult, very difficult.” Apothecary Zuo sighed. “Unless the treasure you gave could move Apothecary Leng’s heart, otherwise, based on how eccentric and proud Apothecary Leng is, he would definitely not personally help to save a life.”

“Even His Majesty the emperor’s royal edict won’t work?” Su Luo frowned, the position of a Apothecary could reach such a height?

“Yes, even if His Majesty were to send an imperial edict, it still won’t be able to invite him. Afterall, Apothecary Leng is only the third Advanced Apothecaries to appear in the country of Eastern Ling.” Apothecary Zuo stroked his beard, eyes filled with admiration.

Since Apothecaries were extremely rare, the royal family regarded Apothecaries as extremely important. They were even accorded with an unusually high degree of freedom.

You could even say that if an Apothecary wanted to serve the empire, they could just report their name and they would get a high post with a generous salary. A mountain of gold or silver, beautiful women and land grants, as long as their demands didn’t threaten the stability of the empire, they could simply name their price.

It could thus be seen, what kind of transcendent status an Apothecary had on this continent?

Su Luo stood up. She silently glanced at Nangong Liuyun and then turned her head to Ling Feng to say. “ Looks like I have to personally make a trip to Leng manor, Nangong Liuyun will be in your care.”

Ling Feng’s brows tightly knotted. “If Steward Xu could not invite him over, what kind of method could you have? It’s better that I go!” He turned around to leave.

If polite words can't invite him over, how about being invited by force? Others may fear to offend Leng Yan but he, Ling Feng, was not afraid!

Su Luo stopped him, her expression was calm and collected. Her tone was very firm. "Believe in me, only I can invite him to come here."

Finished speaking she spoke to Apothecary Zuo. "I still need to further impose on Apothecary Zuo to lead the way. Time is limited, Apothecary Zuo, please."

Apothecary Zuo was curious about what kind of method this Miss had to be so confident and boast that she could invite Apothecary Leng to come. Therefore, he readily agreed.

Although Ling Feng did not approve, he also did not block Su Luo. After all, this was also a chance at hope.

If Su Luo was unable to invite him to come in the end, then he would stake his life and go, even if he had to kidnap Leng Yan to get him here. Who cared about his shitty advanced Apothecary title!

Leng manor was located at a secluded place west of the city. It was close to the southern mountains, and there was no sign of human habitation. The surroundings were quiet, secluded and refined.

Su Luo got out of the horse carriage, when she saw the scene in front of her, she couldn't help but frown slightly.

In front of Leng manor's door was a wide open space, but a lot of people now kneeled in that space, like a sea of black. From a rough estimate, there were unexpectedly more than a hundred people.

What was even more shocking was that even with so many people kneeling on the ground, none of them were making a sound. Each and every one of them was like the sculptures in temples, motionless, without words, like a pile of wood.

At this moment, the dark red doors opened with a –creak– sound. From the door walked out a person in an embroidered robe, at one glance, you could tell he was a fair-and clear -skinned middle-aged man that lived like a prince. He had both hands clasped behind his back, as he arrogantly, slowly strolled out. He critically scanned the crowd of kneeling people.

Whenever he passed in front of a person, the kneeling person would reverently raise up high the tray they were holding with both hands while bowing their heads. The red painted tray held the precious gift that they brought with them.

Some were medicinal herbs that were difficult to find, some were medical books, and some were pearls of jade and crystals. The only thing that was similar was that these stuff, without exception, were not ordinary goods.

However, this Steward of the Leng manor's gaze was as cold as the manor's namesake (1). He was haughty and picky. He directly walked pass three rows and still hadn't seen anything he fancied.

The places he passed, those people had difficulty covering up the despair in their eyes.

Since the Leng household Steward had no indication of being pleased, this told them that they had no chance....

While the Leng household Steward unhurriedly strolled among these people, he also indifferently sneered. "Trash, all of this is trash! How dare all of you bring these garbage here to fool our master? Ha ha, let me tell all of you, not a chance! Hurry up and scam!"

*1) The Chinese character for Leng is cold in English. So the author is implying that the family's last name of cold is appropriated to describe his manner.*

## Chapter 125 – To adapt to one's taste (2)

---

When he had finished speaking, Steward Leng flung his sleeves into the air and went back inside.

All of a sudden, a figure rushed from among the crowd of people. This child was around five or six years old. She had two pigtails, and she hung onto Leng household steward's leg and wailed. "Steward Leng, I beg of you. Please, I beg you to give some medicine. My mother is about to be sick ....wahh...waa... begging you..."

The little girl's words seem to resonate with everyone, and soon an unbroken succession of wailing sounds rose into the air.

The sounds of weeping rose and fell in succession; each was more mournful and miserable than the one before.

However, Steward Leng's face remained impassive as cold as his family name. He shook off the little girl as if discarding a rag, conveniently tossing her aside. He also brushed off his trouser leg as if her touch was filthy. With a cold snort said. "You want the medicine you seek? Only if you can provide our master with some treasure. You think he'll treat a patient and make medicine for free? Dream on!

When he finished speaking, he coldly flung his sleeves to the side and left.

Su Luo's eyebrows wrinkled. So having such a master as this Leng character would give rise to such a servant. This Steward Leng's words, actions and mannerisms were too arrogant. Then Apothecary Leng would probably also be extremely troublesome to deal with.

However, even if you're an advance Apothecary, so what? Don't tell me that you could be better than the legendary Elder Zi Huo? His elder spend a lifetime of his own heart's blood to write 《Obscure Pill Recipes》. The book

was now in her hands. Furthermore she also had that world famous Zi Huo's medicinal cauldron. How could Apothecary Leng have something of equal value?

Su Luo raised an eyebrow to hint at Apothecary Zuo.

A wry smile flashed through Apothecary Zuo's eyes.

Apothecaries also had a ridged ranks among themselves. He, as an intermediate Apothecary, waved his status about in front of others. However in front of an advanced Apothecary, he could only be accommodating.

And as everyone knows, this Steward Leng had accompanied Apothecary Leng since childhood till now. They were very close, and while Apothecary Leng was wholeheartedly immersed in the study of medicine, he would leave everything else in the care of Steward Leng. Therefore it was always Steward Leng being arrogant in front of others, and nobody dared to be arrogant in front of him.

Even take him Apothecary Zuo as an example, when meeting steward Leng he also could not straighten his spine.

Apothecary Zuo put on a smile, called out to steward Leng who was just about to go back in.

Steward Leng turned his head and saw Apothecary Zuo, he frowned slightly. His face had no sign of respect. "Apothecary Zuo, why did you come again? Our master have no time to instructed you in those hideous messy recipes of yours."

When he was done with his lecture, Steward Leng didn't even pause before walking into the doors, indicating to the servants that they should close it after him.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose into a taunting sneer.

You think that an advance Apothecary could be that extraordinary? A simple steward from your household could be so rude to an intermediate Apothecary? Would even dare to close the doors in front of his face? How could he pay so little respect to his counterpart?

Glancing again at Apothecary Zuo, she only saw him stroke his own beard. There was no sadness nor joy on his face, as if he had already anticipated the scenarios in front of him. He was not even a little mad by steward Leng's manner.

As if accustomed to such a scenario.

It was easy to see Yama the king of hell, but little demons were hard to deal with.

No wonder, it's not surprising that even Steward Xu couldn't request Apothecary Leng to come.

Su Luo coldly smiled, one hand preventing the doors from closing. Her voice firmly stated. "Wait a minute!"

Unexpectedly there were actually someone reckless enough to block the door? Steward Leng thought this was inconceivable, and he revealed a face that had a pointed mouth and monkey cheeks. His pair of shrewd and haughty eyes were somber and cold while he opened them to stared at Su Luo. He arrogantly raised his chin and cast sideways glances at Su Luo. "From where did this silly little girl run out of? Don't want to live anymore?"

Such a vulgar and rude steward!

However even though he was so capricious and mule headed, there were still countless number of people kneeling and begging him to accept the gift their family carefully bought and selected using the entire family fortune. This fact again proved to Su Luo that on the continent, the occupation of an Apothecary was case for how great a reverence.

## Chapter 126 – To adapt to one’s taste (3)

---

Su Luo lifted her eyebrows with a smile that was not a smile: “May I ask, is Steward Xu in?”

Steward Xu? A complicated expression flashed across Steward Leng’s face; Steward Xu’s identity was mysterious, and was not someone he could casually offend.

He stared at Su Luo, turned around, then walked away, but he still left behind a single sentence: “Let them in.”

Even though he was merely a steward, he was actually arrogant to this extent ... Su Luo shook her head, she would not bother with this type of person. However if he committed such offense within her hands, then he better beseech good fortune for himself.

With a servant leading the way, Su Luo was very quickly reunited with Steward Xu.

Although Steward Xu did not experience that kind of difficult situation of kneeling outside the doors, he was not much better off.

Steward Leng had placed Steward Xu in room located in a side wing of the manor. A young maid was standing on the side waiting for orders; if hungry, there were pastries on the table, if thirsty, there was tea that was neither hot nor cold, fulfilling the basic requirements mandated by etiquette. However, he still wouldn’t let Steward Xu meet with Apothecary Leng.

Steward Xu’s entire face was full of anxiety. “We can endure it but master can’t, this won’t do! I must personally look for Apothecary Leng. I don’t believe that based on master’s prestige, that he, Leng Yan, would dare to utter the word ‘no’!”

Although this manor was the Tigerwolf Regiment’s secret base, in order to

save His Highness, this kind of risk was worth taking.

Su Luo frowned, was he preparing to inform Apothecary Leng of Nangong Liuyun's identity?

He could only see Su Luo blocking his path., Lowering her voice, she said. "The matter has not reached such an extent. How about this, let me give it a try."

Along the way, Su Luo had observed and heard everything, she already had a good grasp of Leng Yao's temperament. She merely lifted her hands to summon the servant to come, and softly instructed. "Bring me brush, paper and ink-stone."

Although the servant was puzzled, she nevertheless brought all the items Su Luo asked for.

Sitting in front of the table, Su Luo's hand dipped the brush with ink. It seemed as if she was deep in thought.

But in actuality, her spirit was already in her space.

She remembered that when she was in the cave, in addition to picking up Elder Zi Huo's 《Obscure Pill Recipes》, there were also another dozen yellow pages of short notes, with densely-packed symbols and words. At that time, Su Luo's was in an urgent situation, and thus had no time to carefully examine it, only guessing that it could be Primeval Pill Recipes.

A moment ago, she heard Apothecary Zuo say that you could only move Apothecary Leng Yan, if you could give him Primeval Pill Recipes.

Therefore, Su Luo immediately thought of that stack of yellow papers left in the corner of her space.

Su Luo picked it up and carefully flipped through it. Sure enough, every sheet of paper was a pill recipe. Also, it was clearly written on top of every sheet the words Primeval Pill Recipes.

Although Su Luo had never seen what other Primeval Pill Recipes looked like, but Elder Zi Huo's reputation was nevertheless a trustworthy guarantee. Anything that Elder Zi Huo viewed as valuable enough to be put together with

his《Obscure Pill Recipes》could absolutely not be a fake.

Su Luo randomly pulled one out, looked at it, and found that it was a recipe for 《Rebirth of Flesh Pill》.

Rebirth of Flesh Pill, as the name implied, was the idea of regenerating new flesh. If someone had their hand or foot cut off, with the Rebirth of Flesh Pill, it would be possible to regrow the limbs as before.

This sheet of Primeval Pill Recipes had been lost from the continent for a long time. Nobody would have predicted that it would once again appear in Su Luo's hands.

Su Luo closely studied this sheet of Primeval Pill Recipe.

Not only were the required ingredients listed in detail, but it also successively listed every step in the procedure, every detail, and any possible problems that could come up, as well as the solutions to those problems. All of it had been painstakingly clearly recorded. Moreover, to refine this Rebirth of Flesh Pill required the services of an Advanced Apothecary or higher.

Su Luo was currently very far from an Advanced Apothecary, and it would require her to walk a long road to get there. Therefore, she did not care about this pill recipe.

Naturally if this sheet of pill recipe was still unable to move Apothecary Leng, then Su Luo would consider offering him the Zi Huo medicinal cauldron. After all, with regards to her thoughts, the Zi Huo medicinal cauldron was merely a dead object, while Nangong Liuyun was a responsibility that she could not shift to anyone else.

Although Su Luo knew that the Primeval Pill Recipe was very precious, but the facts afterwards proved that she had still excessively underestimated its worth...

## Chapter 127 – To adapt to one’s taste (4)

---

Su Luo decided on this《Rebirth of Flesh Pill Recipe》, after she memorized the words, she withdrew from her space and returned to reality.

Because only her spirit went in, even if the task was accomplished in front of everyone, nobody would be able to see any flaw among her actions to be suspicious off.

Su Luo’s hand grasped the brush and, with a focused expression, she effortlessly started to write. Once she wrote about one third of the recipe, the corner of her eyes perked up and her lips formed a devious and sly smile.

She stopped writing and picked up the paper that could move the heart of Apothecary Leng. She blew on the paper to dry the ink-marks left by the brush. She quickly blow-dried the ink-marks.

Su Luo called to a servant that was passing by with a look that screamed don’t question my order and said. “Deliver this to your master Apothecary Leng.”

The servant frowned.

Ordinarily there inevitably would be guests who want to see Apothecary Leng. They would secretly pass their business card through the servants to deliver to Apothecary Leng. However according to his knowledge, none of these people ever succeeded, furthermore they had to do it shouldering a huge risk.

Therefore that servant without a second thought refused.

However Su Luo only gave an enigmatic smile and said. “Don’t refuse so quickly, don’t you know, your chance to achieve meteoric success of a lifetime is certainly depended on what’s written on this paper.” After she finished speaking, Su Luo immediately stuffed a heavy silver nugget in the servant’s

sleeves.

Placing the icing on cakes, regardless of it being modern or ancient times would always be applicable.

The servant was also very bold, he didn't have to think very long before nodding his head. He securely folded his sleeves together and quickly left.

Watching his back as he left, Su Luo's smile harbored some malicious intentions.

In the midst of this encounter, Steward Xu had a puzzled and unconvinced expression while watching Su Luo. Only now, did he doubtfully inquire. "Miss Su, you have such certainty of the outcome?"

What exactly was written on that piece of paper? Steward Xu was very intrigued.

Su Luo lifted the teacup while showing no signs of nerves, she took a sip of tea. After putting the cup down, her eyelids dropped slightly while her mouth curved into a smile. "It's not me with the assurance, rather that sheet with the pill recipe is determined. Does Steward Xu know what the most precious treasure is to Apothecary Leng?"

Steward Xu earnestly said. "This is not difficult to guess, it definitely is Primeval Pill Recipes." With regards to Apothecaries, all of them had a strong longing for Primeval Pill Recipes.

However, Primeval Pill Recipes had already been lost on the continent. Even the parts that were not lost, was hidden within the control of large and influential families. It certainly would not exist within the hands of ordinary Apothecaries.

Su Luo pursed her lips and smiled, her smile was profoundly mysterious.

Just when Steward Xu was hesitating on what to say, suddenly the sound of hurried footsteps came from outside. Following that the door to the room was urgently pushed open.

The person that came was none other than Steward Leng who had previously glanced at Su Luo with dislike.

Only gloom could be seen on his grumpy face, those arrogant and critical eyes swept Su Luo a quick glance, while haughtily asked her. “Was it you who delivered a slip of paper to our master?”

Su Luo’s gaze was unperturbed. Her snow white skin gave off an icy and distant impression. She raised an eyebrow at him, not denying nor admitting anything.

Steward Leng coldly smiled and sneered. “Didn’t expect that you, such a girl, would have such a scheme planned. Let me tell you. You are very lucky, for our master had agreed to see you. Now come with me!”

Steward Leng’s attitude toward Su Luo was full of disdain and even seemed to hold her in contempt.

Now his condescending manner was like a noble giving charity to Su Luo who happened to be poor.

Although Steward Xu was furious at Steward Leng’s attitude, after hearing that Apothecary Leng had agreed to see Su Luo, the corner of his eyes and eyebrows crinkled into a joyful expression. This means it was entirely possible that Apothecary Leng could potentially personally act to save a life.

However, Su Luo’s behavior made his eyes pop open.

Su Luo’s face remained calm, her icy glass like beautiful eyes indifferently glanced at Steward Leng. She turned toward Steward Xu and serenely said. “We have been here for quite some time and don’t know how the sick person is doing in our family. Let’s go back home and take a look first.”

## Chapter 128 – To adapt to one's taste (5)

---

Having finished speaking, she unhurriedly turned around and walked away, her footsteps were exceptionally firm, the view of her back gave an extremely decisive feeling.

Steward Leng would never have thought that Su Luo would walk away. Moreover, when she said she would leave, she had directly and efficiently left,, without a trace of dragging her feet.

For a period of time, he was somewhat stunned. Among the people who came to seek treatment, who wasn't grovelling or trembling with fear? This loathsome girl had no discerning eyes, unable to tell good from bad!

Steward Leng had a gloomy look on his face, and coldly sneered at Su Luo. He loudly threatened: "Once you walk out of this door, you'd better not expect our master to personally undertake the task of medical treatment! You'd better think carefully!"

This type of threat, for one hundred tries, was one hundred percent effective.

But, this time was an exception.

Su Luo's figure paused, she glanced back and smiled in a charming and touching manner. "Steward Leng, I look forward to seeing you again."

Finished speaking, with an indifferent expression, Su Luo turned around and resolutely walked out.

In fact, Steward Leng really wanted to grab Su Luo and drag her to see Apothecary Leng. However, he didn't know why this calm and tranquil Su Luo gave him a strong feeling of deterrence. It made him acknowledge her, a reverence that prevented him from even resisting her.

Steward Leng coldly snorted, darkly cursing her: “You loathsome girl who doesn’t know what’s good for you, if you have the guts to walk out of these doors, then you’d better not come back crying and begging to enter again.”

Since he was done cursing at her, while heading towards Apothecary Leng’s refining room, he also tried to come up with ideas to tattletale on this loathsome girl to get her in trouble.

Su Luo walked out of the door. She saw Steward Xu manner, which indicated he was hesitant to speak, and she just gave him a smile. “It’s okay, relax. We will just wait here for Apothecary Leng.”

Wait for Apothecary Leng? Miss Su, you could actually say that, even now? Was Apothecary Leng someone who, when a person wanted to see, would actually get to see? Much less even expecting him to personally come out?

It was said that for more than ten years, Apothecary Leng hadn’t taken even half a step outside of his manor, okay? Steward Xu really wanted to yell at Su Luo, but seeing her pretty and delicate manner, he really hadn’t the heart to do so.

Such an opportunity like this that was hard to come by, was wasted by her! Steward Xu panted with rage and turned his face away.

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth arched up slightly, a smiling expression flashed through her eyes.

Her heart was very certain.

Since the haughty and arrogant Steward Leng could personally invite her, then it was enough proof that 《Rebirth of Flesh Pill Recipe》 had already fallen into Apothecary Leng’s hands.

Since that half a page of only a third of Primeval Pill Recipe had already fallen into Apothecary Leng’s hands. With Apothecary Leng’s gaze, why should she worry that the other side wouldn’t know what it was?

Currently, as the seller at the marketplace, she, Su Luo, was the real boss. No matter how rude and unreasonable Apothecary Leng was, what could he possibly do to her? He would definitely still come and beseech her!

Su Luo's mouth turned up into a cold and cruel smile. She was looking forward to the raging tempest that Steward Leng was about to encounter.

Speaking of Steward Leng who was rejected by Su Luo. Afterwards, he had taken large strides towards Apothecary Leng's refining room. However, before he could even knock on the door to ask permission to enter, those eternally closed doors abruptly opened. At the door was an impatient and deeply worried face.

This was a forty to fifty years old middle-aged man. He had a scrawny figure, and his hair and eyebrows were a complete mess. He had a manner that showed he didn't care about his appearance. The white robe on his body had stains all over it. He looked somewhat dishevelled and unkempt.

Before waiting for Apothecary Leng to speak, Steward Leng had already started to complain. "Master, that loathsome girl doesn't know what's good for her. This servant, under your orders, went to invite her, but who would have thought that she would unexpectedly stand up, turn and leave! She was beyond hateful!"

Apothecary Leng's eyes suddenly became severe, he grabbed Steward Leng by the collar, while grinding his teeth, asked. "What did you say!?!?"

Steward Leng thought Apothecary Leng was infuriated because his pride had been provoked. He was overflowing with joy, which increased his courage to make up something more sinister, even though initially there was nothing to complain about. "That loathsome girl also said... She said that there was nothing amazing about you. Not wanting to meet is fine, but she never placed you in her eyes as being worthy of respect!"

## Chapter 129 – To adapt to one's taste (6)

---

“Truly hateful!” Apothecary Leng cursed loudly.

Steward Leng's heart was overjoyed, however, before his smile could reach his eyes, he was thrown to the ground by Apothecary Leng, who then harshly scolded. “It must be you, you repulsive servant, who arrogantly and rudely slighted her! Humph! If that Miss disappears, see how I will fix you!”

Even though he had finished speaking, Apothecary Leng's fury had not subsided, thus he kicked Steward Leng's face with his foot. He immediately rushed out in his dirty and stained work clothes.

Steward Leng held his head that was dizzy and confused from being kicked. He was so depressed that he was about to go insane.

Up to now, he still wasn't clear why such a small piece of paper would have such great charm. It actually made his master immediately run out, abandoning the medicinal pill which he had been working on for seventy-nine days, without a thought.

Since Steward Leng was able to keep his position for many years, he could not be a complete idiot. He crawled up and staggered along, chasing after Apothecary Leng's silhouette to the manor's gate.

Apothecary Leng dashed to the doorway, and saw a sea of people dressed in black in front of the gate. However, he didn't know who among them was the miss that had written the Primeval Pill Recipe.

As for the dense mass of people in front of the gate who hadn't ever met Apothecary Leng, they thus were unable to recognize that the dirty, unkempt old man in front of them was the one they had been crying and begging to meet.

Exactly at this time, Steward Leng also came out, taking large strides towards

Su Luo. His expression had completely changed. He was no longer arrogant, rather, he now had a fawning manner.

He flatteringly smiled and stood in front of Su Luo, blocking her path. “This Miss, please wait. My master has personally come, look there....”

Su Luo serenely shot him a quick glance, and turned to the direction he was looking at.

“Rebirth of Flesh Pill Recipe...” Apothecary Leng’s face had an excited and moved expression as he opened his mouth to inquire.

Su Luo only smiled and handed him another piece of paper.

Su Luo had already divided the Rebirth of Flesh Pill Recipe into three parts, the first part had already been given to Apothecary Leng, now, she handed over the second part.

Su Luo calmly watched Apothecary Leng. She didn’t believe that this wouldn’t entice him.

Sure enough, as Su Luo had expected, Leng Yan, this person, was a pure medicine fanatic. He had characteristics similar to an artist. He didn’t care about his appearance, nor could he be bothered with trifles. His entire body and mind was engrossed in the occupation of refining medicine, because of this, he was willing to struggle for a lifetime. Everything else in his eyes were total \*\*\*\*.

“I want to invite Apothecary Leng to save a person, I don’t know if Apothecary Leng will come?” Su Lu faintly smiled when she saw Apothecary Leng burying his entire face in that piece of paper.

“What about the last part of the recipe...” Apothecary Leng had an excited expression that was hard to conceal.

“If you can cure the person, then naturally I will offer this recipe with both hands.” Su Luo smiled while watching him. “ However, if Apothecary Leng isn’t certain of your ability to cure him, then just pretend that I never said these words.”

Finished speaking, Su Luo turned and started to walk away.

“Fine! This old man will go with you to save the person!” Apothecary Leng was

strung along by the two-thirds of that Primeval Pill Recipe until\*\*\*\*\*, his heart itched terribly. He was itching to get the complete recipe and to thoroughly study it for seven days and nights.

“Apothecary Leng is indeed a person who knows what’s what. Unlike some people, ha, ha.” Su Luo glared at Steward Leng with a smile that was not a smile.

Now, a distinct footprint could be seen on Steward Leng’s face, clearly indicating that he had been stepped on by someone.

Apothecary Leng coldly glared at Steward Leng: “Once I return, I’ll take care of you!” When he was done speaking, he took the initiative to climb up into the horse carriage. He incessantly urged Su Luo. “Hurry, quickly get on. What are you waiting for?”

Obviously, Su Luo’s two-thirds of the Primeval Pill Recipe had succeeded in inciting his interest, to the point that he was pulling his ears and scratching his cheeks. He wished that he could promptly cure this sick person and get the complete pill recipe.

Nangong Liuyun, wait for me. I will definitely have someone cure you! Su Luo secretly clenched her hands into fists.

# Chapter 130 – Wearing iron shoes could break what you're searching for (1)

---

On the horse carriage, Apothecary Leng continuously questioned Su Luo and tried to get more information about the Primeval Pill Recipe. But Su Luo was always evasive about that subject.

How could Apothecary Leng who spend years refining medicine be her opponent? His queries could only end in defeat.

The carriage's speed was very fast.

After about an hour, they had returned to Nangong Liuyun's manor.

When Ling Feng saw that Su Luo actually invited Apothecary Leng over, his eyes flashed with surprise; but he quickly recovered. He grabbed and then pulled Apothecary Leng over to where Nangong Liuyun was, anxiously saying. "Quickly, take a look at our Master!"

Apothecary Leng was just about to blow up in anger, but Su Luo merely shook that thin, yellow piece of paper. Afterwards his eyes began to shine, and he instantly suppressed his darkening mood.

Holding their breath and attentively watching him take Nangong Liuyun's pulse. After about half an hour, Apothecary Leng finally opened his eyes

From the very beginning, Su Luo was focused on the Apothecary's face so as not to miss a single reaction or expression.

When she saw him opening his eyes, Su Luo stepped forward a few steps, "Apothecary Leng, how is it, is it serious?"

Apothecary Leng's eyebrows knit together, from his face emerged a dignified expression, he waited a long time before glancing in Su Luo's eyes. "His five visceras and six internal organs all shifted, the visceras are bleeding

profusely, there are disorders throughout the whole body, and the meridians asphyxiated unable to be moved, wanting to go up but unable to come back down, wanting to go down yet not being able to. So you tell me, don't you think it's serious?"

To think it was this serious!

Su Luo's facial expression remained the same, but in her heart was a hint of helplessness.

Apothecary Leng and Ling Feng's words from before corroborated each other, seamlessly. Before, the words Ling Feng spoke were all true. Nangong Liuyun for her really had forcefully stopped the recuperating process, and even suppressed promotion to next rank, making an already serious set of injuries on his body even worse.

But on top of that, she had even given him such a harsh blow on his weak body, which made it worse and resulted in his current situation.

Su Luo clenched her fist tightly, while at the same time looking dignified and not blinking for an instant. She stared at Apothecary Leng, "Tell me, how can he be cured?"

Apothecary Leng thought for a long time before saying slowly. "Curing him will be difficult, very difficult."

"Tell me!" Su Luo and Ling Feng said in unison.

Only, to make Apothecary Leng say it is very difficult, very difficult these words meant.... Su Luo and Ling Feng were both very nervous, exactly how difficult would it reach?

Apothecary Leng rubbed his smooth chin, pondering for a while, before responding. "We need crystal stones, a lot of green-ranked crystal stones. Of course, if it was higher than green-ranked it would be even better, within three days, can you guys do it?"

"Green-ranked crystal stone? Or higher ranked?"

Su Luo still had not fully processed those words, before Ling Feng shouted out loud in surprise.

**“Yes, they must be at least green-ranked crystal rocks, otherwise it will be difficult to unblock the blood vessels; and if not then even cured, His Highness Prince Jin will remain at sixth-rank, even many years later, no matter how hard he tries his cultivation won’t advance an inch.” Apothecary Leng’s expression was frosty, stressing each syllable.**

**When he was feeling the person’s pulse, he found that his strength was at sixth-rank, and after a little thought, it was obvious. Such a young person in the entire empire that had entered the sixth-rank and was almost at the seventh-rank could only be His Highness Prince Jin.**

**After discovering this fact, no matter how calm Apothecary Leng appeared he could not help but be a little nervous. His Highness Prince Jin was the empire’s hope. If he doesn’t give treated then it ends there. If his treatment was leads to an incomplete recovery then there would be big trouble.**

**Ling Feng’s eyebrows knitted together, he anxiously paced around in the room, “Where can we find some green-ranked crystal stone? Also we even need a lot of it!”**

# Chapter 131 – Wearing iron shoes could break what you’re searching for (2)

---

“It really is difficult.” Apothecary Leng frowned.

Su Luo was completely mystified and was in a perplexed state. She quietly walked to the side and asked Steward Xu. “What are green-ranked crystal stones?”

There were actually people who had never heard of green-ranked crystal stones? Steward Xu was stunned, and with an astonished expression, looked at Su Luo.

“What’s wrong? Is not knowing so strange?”

Steward Xu first nodded his head, then shook his head. Afterwards, he quietly coughed before answering Su Luo. “As everyone knows, if you want to quickly promote your cultivation, there are two ways. One way is to focus and concentrate on practicing, the other way is to absorb the spirit force from a crystal stone. Also, people who follow the first path will definitely not have access to crystal stones, so they can only depend on themselves and practice. It can be said that crystal stones are extremely important to people who practice cultivation.”

There was actually such a thing? Su Luo frowned without a word.

No wonder, before, she was the rumored good-for-nothing, so naturally she would know nothing about practicing cultivation.

Steward Xu continued to say. “It’s said that crystal stones are also divided into seven types based on their characteristics. It follows closely with the spirit strength system, and is divided into: red, orange, yellow, green, cyan, blue and purple, altogether seven types. However, there are very few crystal stones on

this continent. Moreover, the most abundant are the three types-red, orange and yellow. There are very few green-ranked crystal stones. As for the three types after that; cyan, blue and purple, they are even rarer.”

Therefore, wanting to find green-ranked crystal stones within such a short period of time, how could it not be an extremely difficult matter?

“With the imperial family’s strength, there ought to be some in the Great Inner Storehouse for materials. However, this place is a great distance away from the imperial capital. Even if you were to ride on the Dragon Scaled Horse, there still won’t be enough time.” Steward Xu was so anxious that he was pacing around in circles in the room.

Su Luo was also worried and anxious.

What crystal stone? In the end, what kind of stuff was it! Let alone asking her to search, she had never even seen it before.

Ling Feng suddenly stood up and directly ran out., leaving behind only one sentence. “I’ll go search!”

Ling Feng took Prince Jin’s writ plate (1) to the garrison within the city. He turned the warehouse there upside down, almost making the provincial governor suffer an anxiety attack. Even then, he was only able to collect three green-ranked crystal stones.

There were a lot of red, orange and yellow crystal stones, but these were only treasures to ordinary people. Whereas to Nangong Liuyun, as a sixth-ranked martial artist, these crystal stones were already useless.

Ling Feng immediately ran to the Mercenary Union and issued a task to collect green-ranked crystal stones.

One green-ranked crystal stone could be exchanged for one hundred thousand gold coins!

This exchange ratio was extremely high, therefore, the entire city became lively from excitement. Countless people began to transmit this information.

Finally, Ling Feng escorted a carriage of stones and returned to the manor.

When Su Luo came out, she coincidentally saw Ling Feng, carrying a basket full

of rocks that weighed two thousand kilograms, hurriedly walking into the courtyard.

“Quickly, everyone get a basket of source stones, if anyone can cut out a green-ranked crystal stone, the reward is five hundred kilograms of gold!” Ling Feng heroically said.

Once the order was spoken, suddenly, all the subordinates within the manor were filled with passion.

People, because of wealth, could receive Heaven’s punishment and get wiped out from the earth.

What’s more, this wealth could be gained in an upright and proper manner.

“These are the stones?” When Su Luo’s gaze landed on these stones, she couldn’t help but be somewhat distracted. Why did she feel that these dense mass of stones were somehow familiar-looking, as if she had seen it before in some place?

“These are the source stones for crystal stones.” Ling Feng lowered his voice to explain. “Source stones are very strange, no matter how strong the martial artist, they still cannot see into the stone at a glance. Within these source stones, some only contain regular rocks, while other, once cut, would reveal red, orange, even yellow and green crystal stones. Without cutting into the source stones, nobody can tell.”

Su Luo fixed her gaze on these dense mass of stones, and a light flashed in her mind. “These are the source stones for the crystal stones?”

*1) A writ plate from the royal family is usually a gold, handheld plate that has words carved on it. People holding one from the royal family, basically identifies them and their power. The plate given by the emperor himself represents his words, so everyone would kneel and obey when they see it.*

## Chapter 132 – Wearing iron shoes could break what you’re searching for (3)

---

“Yes. All of it came from the nearby specific crystal stone mining sites and I picked up only the ones with most potential. But to cut out a green-ranked crystal stone is still very hard.” Ling Feng’s forehead was wrinkled since the beginning. His entire attention was focused on the scene of a crowd of people cutting stone. His gaze was like an eagle’s, unblinkingly watching.

However, according to Ling Feng and Apothecary Leng’s words, green-ranked crystal stones were really rare. Even if over ten thousand orange crystal stones were cut out, you still may not find a single green-colored crystal stone.

Although this bunch of source stones were all of the best quality with the highest potential, however, after an afternoon of cutting, a total of five hundred red-colored crystal stones, one hundred orange-colored crystal stones, and five yellow crystal stones were cut out. As for green-ranked crystal stones, not even a shadow of them was seen.

After seeing the outcome, Ling Feng’s expression was very ugly.

“Go bring back another batch of stones! I don’t believe that I can’t even cut out a single green-colored crystal stone!” Ling Feng loudly commanded. He was so anxious that his entire palm was sweating. His heart was clearly worried clearly, he was full of fear and dread.

Su Luo asked Apothecary Leng. “In the end, how many green-colored crystal stones will be enough?”

Shouldn’t you at least give a range, after all?

Apothecary Leng thought about it and said. “The more the better, however, at the very least, fifty green-colored crystal stones.”

“Fifty?” Su Luo was depressed. Ling Feng had flipped the entire city upside down and had found three green-colored crystal stones. Apothecary Leng opened his mouth and immediately asked for fifty, wasn’t the difficulty too extreme?

Apothecary Leng answered. “In fact, it doesn’t necessarily require green-colored crystal stones. If there were cyan-colored crystal stones, then ten is enough. For blue-colored crystal stones, only two will be enough. If there is a purple-colored crystal stone, not to mention one, just a little piece will contain enough spirit strength.”

Su Luo become despondent.

Green-colored crystal stones were already hard to come by, not to mention the rarity of finding cyan-, blue-and purple-colored crystal stones on the entire continent? This was impossible.

She saw Ling Feng running over to cut stones, and Su Luo’s mind lit up.

How could she have forgotten? There were more than ten dark-coloured mass of source stones in her space! At that time in Elder Zi Huo’s cave, she had nearly abandoned them, but she swept them up when she found that they could expand her space.

Su Luo found a secluded place and with a thought, her spirit entered her space.

The space was a little crowded, but in that crowded space, what did Su Luo see?

She unexpectedly saw little Meng Meng, her contracted spirit pet which was originally a dragon, but had his body changed into a puppy. He used a human-like manner to sit on the floor with legs crossed, in front of a pile of source stones the size of a small mountain. But the him right now was unexpectedly cupping a source stone with both hands. He....

Su Luo thought her eyes were seeing things. so she rubbed her eyes. But the scene in front of her eyes did not change.

Her cute and adorable to the point of making people burst, little spirit pet, like peeling a banana, was, from top to bottom tearing strips off from the source

stone.

Yes, even if it was a master like Ling Feng, he would still need specialized tools to cut the source stone, because source stones were unusually hard. Even a master would have a difficult time destroying the stone.

However, her adorable little Meng Meng could peel it like a banana or an orange, petal by petal, pulling it apart. Afterwards, he would stuff the peeled crystal stone into his own mouth, chewing with 'crunch, crunch' sounds as if it was very delicious!

Wait, wait!

What did she just see?

Su Luo only felt a flash of green pass by her eyes, this familiar green color was something she had only recently seen.

This was definitely not real!

Ling Feng had turned the city upside down looking for green-colored crystal stones, yet the result was that her little spirit pet would swallow the green-colored crystal stone as if they were snacks!?

Unexpectedly, how could he just casually peel out a green-colored crystal stone?

Su Luo suddenly had the feeling that she was facing the wind, causing her cheeks to stream with tears. This luck stuff, was too f\*cking important! This must be the characteristics of a person!

Su Luo rushed over, with one hand, she picked up her little spirit pet, her smile was sinister and sly. "Looting, huh! If you value your life, immediately spit out the stuff you just swallowed."

The adorable little dragon, with his wet, wretched large eyes looked at Su Luo. His two paws desperately covered his little mouth, no matter what, he wouldn't relent and open his mouth.

# Chapter 133 – To have come about with no effort (1)

---

Looking at those eyes, even Su Luo's heart softened.

“Okay, okay, that piece can just be your payment, but for the rest of these, you are not allowed to eat them on the sly.”

Su Luo looked down at the scattered pile of source stone waste products, and her heart felt a dull ache of pain. She directly knocked on the adorable little dragon's head, “You spendthrift!”

Those weren't melon seeds or peas, but green-ranked crystal stones, okay? Ling Feng had announced that one could be traded for a hundred thousand gold coins.

The adorable little dragon was completely oblivious as to why his master had a painful expression as he chewed on his gourmet food with ‘crunch, crunch’ sounds. He was bouncing up and down, looking very cheerful.

Su Luo picked him up and placed him into her arms. Then, she made him sit cross-legged in front of her .

Looking at the pile of stones in front of her, Su Luo wanted to try her luck. Therefore, she selected carefully and chose a stone to give to the adorable little dragon. This baby's manual labour skills was much faster than the tools used for cutting. Not utilising free labour was such a waste of resources, and it was also a shame.

The adorable little dragon acted as free labour on his own initiative . He received that piece of melon-sized stone, and suddenly, he turned his head, using those pair of large eyes, which were clear as water, to look at Su Luo. It was as if he was a bit confused on why Su Luo would choose this piece of stone.



fell.

Her luck was really bad! It was even worse than the first time.

At least the first time she had gotten a yellow-colored crystal stone, this time it wasn't even yellow, but orange.

Su Luo rubbed her temples, she was a bit annoyed, but finally, she managed to cheer up. "I don't believe my luck can continue to get worse and worse! Come, peel this one!"

This time, Su Luo did not carefully pick and choose, she directly picked up the nearest source stone, that was about as big as a watermelon. She energetically handed it over to the adorable little dragon.

Since it depended on luck, then there was no point in picking carefully. If there was luck, you could even find a good one with closed eyes, if there was no luck, even if you had a piece of purple-colored crystal stone in your hand, it would be swindled by somebody else.

# Chapter 134 – To have come about with no effort (2)

---

This time the adorable little dragon still used that pair of dark colored eyes to look at Su Luo. Only this time, the sympathy in his eyes was even more obvious, to the point that even Su Luo could almost see it.

The result, when it was peeled, she checked.

Su Luo nearly knelt down, almost giving up!

What kind of shitty luck did she have today? Her luck was simply disastrous to possess!

The results had gotten worse each time!

The first time wasn't bad, a yellow-colored crystal stone came out. The second time, she had peeled out an orange-colored crystal stone, and the third time.....it turned out to be a red-colored crystal stone! It was such a big piece of red colored crystal stone too, she really wanted to cry but lack the tears.

Su Luo thought, if she picked another one, would it end up with nothing inside of it?

Su Luo's hand supported her forehead, she sat there looking depressed. She dispirited looked at her pair of hands that had bad luck.

The adorable little dragon looked confusedly at his dispirited master, crooked his head pondered for a bit. He had a feeling that he couldn't help, consequently he sat on top of the pile of source stone to obediently play by peeling more stones.

That lovable appearance was like a little child playing in must, just looking at the scene would make anybody's heart soften.

Su Luo was in the midst of being depressed, when suddenly, a piece of green thing appeared in front of her. She subconsciously lifted her eyes and looked up, and was surprised to see a piece of green-colored crystal stone. Moreover it even turned out to be as big as a fist in size!

Su Luo looked blankly at that piece of green-colored crystal stone, then following the stone she looked up. She saw a pair of furry little paws, and further up, was the adorable little dragon's cute little face.

Okay, Su Luo felt jealous.

Why was it, that when she had spent so long picking stones, she couldn't even get a single green-colored crystal stone. However, the adorable little dragon soon after would grab one? And how come it was even such a big piece?

It really made people feel jealous, don't you think so?

But, just being able to find it was great! Su Luo excitedly rubbed the adorable little dragon's head. Her mood immediately lifted like the clear skies after the rain. "Quick, help master find a few more pieces of these."

Su Luo felt her luck was terrible, so she would just not use her own hands. She let the adorable little dragon to directly pick and choose.

Making her happy, but also a little depressed was that the adorable little dragon's luck was simply too good.

Good luck couldn't even be used describe it, he was simply bursting with luck!

The first piece, when peeled out, was a green-colored crystal stone!

The second piece, when peeled out, was a green-colored crystal stone!

The third piece, when peeled out, was another green-colored crystal stone!

This-this-this.....this, what kind of luck was this? Su Luo was excited that her cheeks were streaming with tears, both eyes were red.

Suddenly, Su Luo's mind flashed with an idea. She realized that previously, she had missed something!

Previously, when the adorable little dragon was looking at her with his clear watery eyes, they were full of sympathy! He was full of sympathy towards her.

What could this mean? This meant that even when he picked up the source stone, he had already known if there was a crystal stone inside or not. He could also tell what color the crystal stone inside was thus he would use that perplexed and sympathetic eyes to looked at Su Luo.

To have been pitied by this little guy, Su Luo felt like she wanted to cry again.

Whether or not this was true, there needed to be proof. However to prove it, was actually really simple.

Su Luo smilingly placed the adorable little dragon in front of the pile of source stones, coaxing him, saying. “Good boy, help master look for a cyan-colored crystal stones, okay?”

Cyan-colored? The adorable little dragon wrinkled his nose a bit from the difficulty of it, but he still strictly followed the orders of his owner. His pair of petite little paws seemed to contain strength to lift five hundred kilograms. Piece by piece he threw aside the source stones on top, digging straight to the bottom of the pile.

Finally, he accurately grabbed a small, fist-sized source stone and handed it to Su Luo.

“Inside this is a cyan-colored crystal stone?” Su Luo half-believed and half-doubtful while pondering about this piece of source stone.

## Chapter 135 – To have come about with no effort (3)

---

“Un!” The adorable little dragon’s articulation wasn’t too clear, but he nodded firmly. He still couldn’t speak, so he could only use this way to communicate.

“Fine, then let’s peel it to find out.” Su Luo handed the source stone back to him.

The adorable little dragon obediently took it. He quickly stripped down the source stone, in a showing off manner he handed the crystal stone inside to Su Luo.

He had a cute look that was clearly seeking praise, his little tail was cocked up high, continuously running around Su Luo.

Cyan color! To think it was actually cyan-colored! Su Luo looked at the hazy, fluorescently glowing cyan-coloured stone in her hand. She was both happy and astonished, which was then followed by excitement!

She was as happy as could be, Apothecary Leng had said, only ten cyan-colored crystal stones were needed to heal Nangong Liuyun’s wounds.

She was as astonished as could be, that the adorable little dragon could see through the surface to the inside of the stones.

She was excited as could be because she could go source stone gambling, using the lowest prices to bet and won all the ones with crystal stones in them!

However, currently the most important thing was to save Nangong Liuyun.

So, based on her unlucky little black hands, Su Luo wouldn’t even dare to touch those source stones. She let the adorable little dragon to peel all of the source stones.

After all, his speed was even faster than a cutting tool, not using him was a waste.

Also, though she did not know what the adorable little dragon's claws were made of, they were probably made of the same material as his teeth. So, as they say, dragons had a natural advantage, although on the outside he was a little puppy, his teeth and claws were far stronger than that of human's.

Just when Su Luo was indulging in flights of fancy, the adorable little dragon had already peeled all of the source stones.

Since this group of source stones came from Elder Zi Huo's cave, therefore the probability of source stones having crystal stones were extremely high.

There were approximately thirty stones, apart from those eaten by the adorable little dragon as snacks in the beginning, and those touched by Su Luo's darkly unlucky hands, the rest all had crystal stones. Moreover, the worst were yellow-colored crystal stones.

Among them, there were ten yellow-colored crystal stones, five green-colored crystal stones, and there were even three cyan-colored crystal stones. Finally, and unexpectedly, even a blue-colored crystal stone was peeled out. This probability was simply going against the Heavens.

This was calculated according to five times the original green-colored crystal stone conversion given by Apothecary Leng.

One piece of blue-colored crystal stone was equal to twenty-five pieces of green-colored crystal stones.

One piece of cyan-colored crystal stone was equivalent to five pieces of green-colored crystal stones.

Therefore, in Su Luo's hands, she had twenty-five plus fifteen, and adding another five pieces, giving a grand total of forty-five pieces of green-colored crystal stones!

Before, Ling Feng had carried back a lot of source stones, saying they were the ones with the highest probability from the mines. However, from so many source stones, not even a single piece of green-colored crystal stone was found. But, her own source stones, which numbered at a few dozen, would contain so many

crystal stones!

Su Luo had a strong suspicion that Elder Zi Huo from that time, may have had the same skills as the adorable little dragon. He was probably also able to see through source stones and the situation within, at a glance.

Otherwise, there was simply no other way to explain the high probability of such a large number of high-grade crystal stones appearing in these source stones.

However, it was fortunate that, at that time she had tossed these stones into her space. Otherwise, she wouldn't know what ought to be done about Nangong Liuyun's injury.

After Su Luo appeased the adorable little dragon, she left her space.

She arrived at the practice area, this place, before, was indeed a practice area. However now, it was a place for cutting source stones.

The mood at the site was full of enthusiasm. Everybody was in the midst of enthusiastically cutting source stones.

Even Steward Xu was also personally cutting stones, but his luck clearly wasn't very good. Su Luo saw him cut open three to four stones and found them to be completely empty, not even a sliver of crystal stone could be seen.

When Steward Xu saw Su Luo came over, he inevitably let out a groan and said. "This entire afternoon, although a few crystal stones have been found, not a sliver from the side of a green-colored crystal stone could be seen. Ling Feng has become so anxious that he is about to go mad."

"Not even one was found?" Su Luo was so astonished that her eyes opened wide.

This entire afternoon, gold coins had been used like running water spilling out, but to actually not find a single green-colored crystal stone?

Was it because Ling Feng's luck was too terrible, or that green-colored crystal stones were truly difficult to find in this world?

# Chapter 136 – To have come about with no effort (4)

---

No green-colored crystal stones had been cut out from the source stones. However, news had come from the Mercenary Union, and Ling Feng spend two hundred thousand gold coins to buy two pieces of green-colored crystal stones.

He looked at the merely five pieces of green-colored crystal stones in his hand, and he was angry enough to be driven mad. He impatiently paced around in the room.

He had spared no expense and used all the manpower and physical resources, and yet he had barely managed to obtain five pieces... Apothecary Leng had demanded fifty pieces! How could this be enough? It was not enough to even scratch the surface of what was required.

Su Luo saw Ling Feng's appearance, which seemed as though he was about to fall apart. She squeezed her fist tightly, wanting to walk up to him, but finally had to stop her footsteps.

Passing through the fragments of wasted stone scraps on the ground, she deeply understood the value represented by these crystal stones. Even having a few pieces was comparable to having a mountain of gold and silver.

Yet, by what means could she take out the crystal stones smoothly without making herself look suspicious? This was a difficult problem.

Suddenly, a bulb lighted up in her head.

Hadn't Ling Feng given an request at the Mercenary Union? Couldn't she just drop off the crystal stones at the Mercenary Union? At that time, she would receive a huge amount of gold coins.

However, upon closer scrutiny, she could not do it.

Without even first considering the consequences of the Mercenary Union leaking her identity, just thinking of those several tens of millions of gold coins, she had no way to transport it all away.

Although she had her space, it also wasn't omnipotent. Right now, it was already practically filled to the brim and would be unable to fit all those gold coins.

Then, how could she give these crystal stones to Ling Feng? Su Luo somewhat anxiously wondered around the courtyard, holding little Meng Meng in her arms.

Others were worried about not finding crystal stones, while she was worried about having too many crystal stones.

If others were to find out, they would be so infuriated to the point of spitting out blood.

Su Luo thought about it, and in the end, she still couldn't find an absolutely safe plan. She might as well just straightforwardly throw it out there, since a broken jar wasn't worth smashing anyway. She stuffed the crystal stones into a cotton sack, handed it all over to Ling Feng, who was so worried that both of his eyes were red, and said, "here, take it."

"What?" Ling Feng's forehead knotted, with an annoyed look, he said. "Why are you giving me a bag? The high and mighty Miss Su, I don't have time to play with you right now!"

Saying this, Ling Feng tossed the bag back to her, his actions were rough and rude.

Frightening! He had issued a task to buy each green-colored crystal stone for one hundred thousand gold coins, and now, he actually threw the entire bag of stones out?

Su Luo was dumbfounded, she looked up, down, left and right at this dumbass. She seriously asked. "You really don't want it?"

"Stop messing around! If you have time to go stroll around the Mercenary Union, maybe like a blind cat, you can also run into a dead mouse, and purchase a green-colored crystal stone." Ling Feng impatiently waved his hand with a manner that told her move to the aside.

Ling Feng, ah, Ling Feng, how did your master raise such a blockhead like you? You don't want the ones delivered to your door, but insist on taking huge amount of money from your pocket to buy it?

This miss really didn't want to make a profit from your master His Highness' money, but it honestly was that this child didn't know how to appreciate my kindness. Su Luo secretly thought.

“Mercenary Union? Oh right, is the assignment you issued for purchasing green-colored crystal stones still count? The assignment for purchasing one green-colored crystal stone for one hundred thousand gold coins.” Su Luo again verified with him.

To not make use of convenient advantages was the action of a damn idiot, Nangong Liuyun, you could only blame yourself for raising such an idiotic subordinate.

“Naturally, it absolutely counts! If you can hand over a green-colored crystal stone, then I will absolutely offer up the gold coins with both hands.” Ling Feng disdainfully swept Su Luo a glance. “Can you take out even one? If you can, then I, Ling Feng, will from now on work really hard as your slave!”

Since it was getting late and a single green-colored crystal stone still couldn't be found, therefore, Ling Feng's natural ice-cold temperament had now appeared to be very irritable.

Taking Ling Feng whose strength was of the sixth rank as a slave? What a great idea!

# Chapter 137 – To have come about with no effort (5)

---

“A man of character once said that promises must be kept.” Su Luo smiled slyly.

“Fine, whoever renegades on the promise is a little dog!”

A devious smile appeared in Su Luo’s eyes, she laughingly opened the sack and unhurriedly pulled out a green-colored crystal stone. She proudly waved it in front of Ling Feng. “See here, such a beautiful green-colored crystal stone. Someone actually said that he doesn’t want it.”

Such a verdant and glistening green, the green was dazzling to the eyes.

Ling Feng stared with astonishment at the sparkling and translucent green-colored crystal stone in Su Luo’s hand. In the next second, a joyful ecstasy flashed through his eyes. He snatched the green-colored crystal stone from Su Luo’s hand, and unable to contain his joy, said. “It truly is! It actually is a green-colored crystal stone!”

“That’s right, even you admit it? I say, Ling Feng you slave, shouldn’t you now be carrying over some tea and start pouring some for me, your master?” Su Luo leisurely sat on the stone bench in the courtyard, her face smiling with a manner showing that she had gotten away with an evil scheme.

Since the beginning, Ling Feng had an attitude towards her of finding fault from her nose to her eyes. Now it was all well and good, he was trapped by his own words.

Embarrassment flashed across Ling Feng’s ice-cold face, however, emotionless cold people deserved to be called thick-skinned. He automatically ignored Su Luo’s words and yelled loudly at her. “Only one? Is there more? Where did you

get it?”

Su Luo merely fiddled around with the bag, not saying a word and just smiled.

Ling Feng was naturally a wise person, he snatched the bag from her hand, and directly opened it to look inside.

With just one glance, he immediately became dumbfounded!

How, how could it be! How could such an ordinary cotton bag be stuffed with such priceless crystal stones?

It was not limited to just green-colored crystal stones, but it even contained cyan-colored crystal stones? No, no, no, that was clearly blue-colored...it couldn't really be a blue-colored crystal stone right?

Ling Feng felt that his brain was about to quickly explode. He stupidly stood there and idiotically stared at those exceptionally rare crystal stones. Once again, he dazedly lifted up his head to stare at Su Luo.

Even such an ice-cold and cheerless man, couldn't speak clearly. “This, all of this, all of this is from, where is it from?”

From this, it was sufficient to see how moved and excited he was.

Su Luo casually waved her hand, she calmly shot him a quick glance, while even putting on an appearance that showed she did not care even a bit. “Isn't it just a few worn out stones? Look at you, how can you be so excited to such an extent?”

“Worn, worn out stones!” Ling Feng's first reaction was to cut open this fourth miss from the Su family's head to have a look inside. How was her brain constructed? She had actually said that these crystal stones were worn out stones!

“What, aren't they worn out stones?” Su Luo's smile was very infuriating, it was the very model of someone having taken convenient advantage and flaunting it.

“Do you know, by adding together all the crystal stones in here, it is enough to buy an entire city!” Ling Feng reproached her loudly. “Do you know, His Highness, in order to obtain one blue-colored crystal stone, how much had he

spent on manpower and physical resources, and yet he still couldn't get one. You can actually say that it is a worn out stone! Do you know, just this one blue-colored crystal stone, is sufficient to cause a lot of sects to fight over it? Do you know....”

“Stop—” Su Luo made a ‘stop’ hand gesture. “I don't know anything, but I only know one thing, if you continue to yell loudly, then you won't be able to safeguard these crystal stones.”

Immediately, Ling Feng's excitement came to a grinding halt.

He inhaled deeply, he controlled his excessively excited mood. Afterwards, with trembling hands, he counted one by one the crystal stones in the bag.

He counted no less than ten times before finally confirming. “One piece of blue crystal stone is equivalent to twenty-five pieces of green-colored crystal stone. Three cyan-colored crystal stone is equivalent to fifteen green-colored crystal stones. Moreover there was an additional five pieces of green-colored crystal stones...”

# Chapter 138 – To have come about with no effort (6)

---

This was too much of a coincidence right? Adding in the five pieces that he had spent an enormous sum to buy, how did it come out to be exactly fifty green-colored crystal stones?

Just at this moment, Steward Xu hurriedly walked over. His face had a rarely seen smiling expression, and he excitedly said to Ling Feng. “Good news! Extremely good news! The Mercenary Union has passed along some information saying that there is a client with quite a few green-colored crystal stones in his hands. However, he wants you to double the original price before selling.”

“Even this is good news?” Su Luo stroked little Meng Meng’s soft white fur, and laughed lightly.

“If it can save His Highness, then gold coins are not a problem!” Steward Xu had become beyond worried due to having found zero green-colored crystal stones even after cutting all afternoon. Now, he wished that he could exchange mountains of gold and silver for green-colored crystal stones.

A look of disgust flashed across Ling Feng’s eyes. “Before, they would not sell a single one, but now, they have even started to try to raise the price? Steward Xu, go and remove that announcement.”

“This...” Steward Xu became agitated.

“Be at ease, we have found the required number of green-colored crystal stones.” Su Luo said with a smile. As for where she had obtained them, Ling Feng didn’t dare to interrogate her. At most, they could just wait for Nangong Liuyun to wake up and explain it to him, and then let him deal with it.

Inside the room.

When Apothecary Leng saw that huge sack of crystal stones, he couldn't stop being fearful for a long time. The moment he saw that crystal stone shining with a deep blue radiance, his pair of eyes was almost sucked into the eye sockets. For a very long time, his pupils couldn't come out.

The always cool-headed Apothecary Leng, the aloof and remote Apothecary Leng, like Ling Feng, also started to stammer. "Is it, is it really a blue-colored crystal stone?"

In his life, he had only gotten to glance at it for a short time, since it was always in others' hands!

He didn't even have the qualifications to touch it!

For a moment, he felt moved, then excitement followed. He felt that this trip was truly worth it!

That blue-colored crystal stone radiated a rich, pure spirit air, that permeated throughout the room. It made him feel as if his spirit was had been cleansed.

Ah, a blue-coloured crystal stone...

How could this be possible? In spite of everything, they had really been able to collect so many crystal stones within the short period of one day. Moreover, it also contained a blue-colored crystal stone, which was extremely rare and coveted by people everywhere. This was truly inconceivable.

At this moment, Apothecary Leng had surmised that His Highness Prince Jin had an unimaginable amount of mysterious manpower and resources.

Su Luo saw that Apothecary Leng's eyes were so mesmerized by the blue-colored crystal stone, so much so that they couldn't leave it. She curiously asked. "Apothecary Leng, can a blue-colored crystal stone replace green-colored crystal stones? There won't be any problems, right?"

"There are problems, of course there are problems!" His train of thought was interrupted. If it was switched to the normal Apothecary Leng, he would have started yelling at her a lot earlier. Right now, he wouldn't even dare to breathe loudly, afraid of profaning that pure, blue-colored crystal stone.

"What kind of problem?" Su Luo and Ling Feng both became anxious.

“Of course there are problems! Putting such a good piece of blue-colored crystal stone in, at that time, the resulting refined medicinal pill will have double the effectiveness!” Apothecary Leng chuckled while stroking his few strands of his goatee. He was laughing, and was very pleased with himself. “Throughout this old man’s entire life, I have never received such great material. This time, I will be able to refine a pill that will be unrivaled.”

This old guy’s talk really made people’s heart jump in alarm.

But at the same time, both Su Luo and Ling Feng let out a breath of relief.

It looked like, Nangong Liuyun could be saved right?

“Then, why aren’t you leaving to quickly refine it now?” Su Luo urged without delay. The earlier Nangong Liuyun could be saved, the quicker her feeling of guilt would be eliminated.

“Good, good, good, this old man will go now, will go now!” Apothecary Leng’s mood could not be described by only the one word for ‘good’.

The pill refined from this process, aside from helping His Highness Prince Jin, it also had great benefits to himself.

## Chapter 139 – Dark mist (1)

---

He had been trapped at the Advanced Apothecary level for many years because he lacked the chance. Now, the opportunity for advancement had come out of nowhere, how could he let it go?

Even if Su Luo forbade him from refining the pill, he would yell and cry until she allowed him to refine it.

When Su Luo saw Apothecary Leng's unconstrained excited mood, she very slyly and cunningly opened her mouth to say, "wait."

Although Apothecary Leng turned his head around, he had a death grip on the sack of crystal stones and stood in a posture as if trying to prevent Su Luo from running over and snatching the sack away.

Su Luo secretly laughed inside.

I wasn't worried that you wouldn't cherish it, I was just afraid that you wouldn't know its value.

If an elder such as yourself doesn't like it, then what could I use as a bargaining chip to negotiate conditions with?

Su Luo pretended to take back the sack by reaching for it, but Apothecary Leng's speed was surprisingly fast. She had no idea what mysterious steps he used as he slipped away through the side. Su Luo wasn't even able to catch a corner of his clothing.

"Apothecary Leng, those are my crystal stones!" Su Luo shouted, feigning anger. Her facial expression looked very pained.

"What do you want?" Apothecary Leng subconsciously blurted out. He hadn't realized that just by asking, he had revealed his desperation.

How could someone who spent years peacefully refining medicine be Su Luo's

opponent?

He saw Su Luo slowly throw him a glance. Her hands holding little Meng Meng unhurriedly caressed the puppy's fur. She slowly and serenely said. "I suddenly changed my mind. I want to keep that piece of blue-colored crystal stone."

"No way!" Apothecary Leng unhesitantly and absolutely refused. "I can't return the blue-colored crystal stone to you!"

"Why? Those stones were mine to begin with. Besides, I have other uses for it." Su Luo acted as if she was troubled. "This piece of blue-colored crystal stone will be very useful when I want to level up my cultivation in the future."

To have such an opportunity to take advantage, only an idiot would pass it up. Su Luo would never give up such a rare opportunity. The opponent was Apothecary Leng Yan, this empire's only third Advanced Apothecary. If she didn't extort some goods, then in the future, wouldn't she not feel ashamed when saying she had met Apothecary Leng?

"It is possible to stimulate your cultivation by using immortality pills! Whatever immortality pills you need, this old man can exchange with you. No, no need for exchange. This old man will give it to you directly. Well, what kind of immortality pills do you want?" Apothecary Leng was worthy of being called single-minded, he directly jumped into Su Luo's trap.

Su Luo while holding the upper hand did not even think twice before trying to set the price. She looked at Apothecary Leng for a while with a 'you are making it difficult for me' expression before slowly saying. "What kind of immortality pills do you think could be equal to this blue-colored crystal stone? What kind of price do you feel is worthy of this blue-colored crystal stone? Such a generous Advanced Apothecary like yourself won't take advantage of a junior like me, right?"

At the side, Ling Feng's mouth twitched. She was truly worthy of being the object of His Highness Prince Jin's infatuation. Su Luo was as two-faced, cunning, and devious as His Highness.

Ling Feng really wanted to remind Apothecary Leng that the blue-colored crystal stone had been provided for His Highness Prince Jin's benefit. Apothecary Leng still had not mentioned his own fees yet.

However, Ling Feng didn't understand Apothecary Leng as well as Su Luo did. In Apothecary Leng's straightforward black and white world, this blue-colored crystal stone could be the deciding factor to help him advance to the next level of Elite Apothecary. This level of advancement to such a medicine fanatic could not be exchanged for any amount of gold coins or immortality pills.

Furthermore, with regards to Apothecary Leng, he may not have a lot of other things, but he had an abundance of immortality pills.

Apothecary Leng thought about it and very shamefully said. "How about I give you half of all the immortality pills that I have refined?"

From Apothecary Leng's point of view, he had taken huge advantage of Su Luo.

After all, that blue-colored crystal stone from years ago, he had only the qualification to see it from a distance. Now, this piece of blue-colored crystal stone was already in his hands.

## Chapter 140 – Dark mist (2)

---

Half of all of the pills he refined? Even Su Luo was so shocked that it took a while for her to wake up.

The amount presented really was worthy of being offered by Apothecary Leng; it was indeed a cost of massive proportions. As expected of a spendthrift!

“Half...” Su Luo was well-versed in methods of haggling over the price, so she muttered out half a phrase not agreeing yet not disagreeing; all the while she still gave her opponent enough space to think.

The biggest weakness of people like Apothecary Leng, who spend their entire life immersed in research on medicine, were their single-mindedness and impoliteness. An apothecary was the best model for this type of person. .

He saw Su Luo’s hesitation and couldn’t help but become worried and hurriedly said. “If half is not enough then two third! The stock of refined immortality pills that this old man has accumulated from many years , two thirds of it will be given to you. How about it?!”

Such a wealthy and overbearing Apothecary Leng! This bold, imposing manner and extravagance almost even made Su Luo choke.

However, what kind of person was Su Luo? She was a model of treacherous miss trying to take advantage of someone while trying to sell an obedient front to others.

They only saw her face revealing having an incredibly small, pained expression, half-heartedly and undecidedly looked at Ling Feng, then looked at Apothecary Leng as if still unable to make a final decision.

Ling Feng immediately turned his face away. He really didn’t have the heart to see a person of good moral standing and reputation like Apothecary Leng

being led by the nose by this little girl.

Apothecary Leng with a very serious and deadly earnest expression stared at Su Luo. Both of his hands had a death grip on the sack with crystal stones, as if saying if you dare steal the bag then I will start yelling at you expression.

“Then...Okay. Since it’s Apothecary Leng who asked then of course I will give you face. Then this is thus settled.” Su Luo hesitated for awhile before agreeing.

She would never tell Apothecary Leng that she actually wanted to extort knockout drugs, poison, \*\*\*\* such type of pills. Who knew that Apothecary Leng would be so sincere. If she didn’t take the opportunity to rip off even more then she would have felt that she had let down this golden opportunity bestowed by the Heavens.

If there are convenient advantages that I don’t take then the fury of heaven’s will may split me in half with lightning.

At this time Apothecary Leng released a breath of relief and wiped at the non-existent cold sweat on his forehead. Momentarily he felt that this girl was more difficult to handle then even the most profound immortality pill recipe.

Immediately Apothecary Leng wanted to return to his manor and start refining this immortality pill.

After three days of refining, Apothecary Leng personally came over cupping a delicate little embroidered box.

At the same time, in his horse carriage there was also a ten centimeter long wooden box.

He handed the wooden box to Su Luo. “This old man’s collection for many years are mostly in here, quickly take it!”

They had been collected for so many years and in a moment were given away. Apothecary Leng had been somewhat unable to cope with his feelings. However his expression was very joyful; could this old man really succeeded in becoming an Elite Apothecary?

Su Luo had asked, and Apothecary Leng, with only a few strokes of the

whiskers of his goat like beard, had happily laughed straight away.

Su Luo's heart clearly understood. This old man certainly did get promoted, otherwise he wouldn't be so generous. But when she see the inside of that box....

“This is what you called two third of your stuff? So little?” Su Luo was somewhat dumbfounded.

How come it was so different from what she had imagined? Two third ah, shouldn't it be at least a trunk of stuff? How could it be such as small case?

Apothecary Leng glared at Su Luo as if looking at an idiot, blew at his beard, scowled and angrily rebuked. “Such a girl, what kind of stuff do you think this old man refines? Do you think it's the three types of indiscriminate knockout drugs, poison, and \*\*\*\* like?”

Su Luo suddenly had an urge to cry...

Who knew that Apothecary Leng would proudly continue to say. “All the things this old man refined were unique secret recipes. Didn't you see those people kneeling in front of this old man's manor door? Even one of the pills in here could make those people scoop out their hearts and hand it to you. You girl who don't even know the good from the bad could even dare to look down on it.”

“But....” What does she need those hearts for!

## Chapter 141 – Dark mist (3)

---

Her home manor was a mess with a bunch of things that needed to be settled. Dealing with so many corrupt and sinister people, she needed those indiscriminate knockout drugs, poisons, and aphrodisiacs for self-protection.

“If you don’t want these immortality pills, then what do you want?” Apothecary Leng was very confused. All the people he had come across longed for these immortality pills until they almost went insane.

Su Luo simply and honestly told him the truth regarding what she really needed.

The result was that Apothecary Leng became infuriated. He widened his eyes and glared. With an attitude of wanting to eat her and panting with rage, he said. “How could this old man refine those?! Only Elementary Apothecaries would refine such dirty, indiscriminate types of pills. How could you look down on this old man so much?! Do you know that every single immortality pill in this box could be exchanged for a carriage-full of the pills you want?!”

Facing Apothecary Leng’s ‘you don’t know crap’ expression, Su Luo felt deeply inferior.

It turned out that a single immortality pill in the box could be exchanged for an entire carriage of knockout drugs. She really didn’t know anything at all.

Apothecary Leng snorted, tossed his sleeves, and entered the room.

Su Luo founded a deserted corner and prudently placed that small box of immortality pills into her space.

Apothecary Leng’s products must be extraordinary goods. Before she could progress to the Advance Apothecary stage, this small box of immortality pills will be very useful to her.

Within the chamber, Nangong Liuyun quietly laid on the bed.

Even though he was unconscious, his expression was still stern and gloomy due to the pain. Both of his hands were tightly clenched into fists with blue veins bursting out as Nangong Liuyan was using a lot of strength to hold on. His face emitted a blood-thirsty and murderous air.

“Make him swallow this bottle of medicine.” Apothecary Leng said after inspecting Nangong Liuyun’s injuries, nodding his head towards Su Luo.

Under Apothecary Leng’s directions, Su Luo helped Nangong Liuyun to sit up. She leaned his ice-cold and stiff body onto hers and with great difficulty fed the bottle of black medicine into his mouth.

When the medicine first entered, Nangong Liuyun had no particular reaction.

After about an hour, the medicine started to take effect on Nangong Liuyun’s body.

“Open up his clothing.” Apothecary Leng loudly instructed.

Su Luo untied Nangong Liuyun’s purple colored belt. His breathing had become shallow and hurried. His porcelain white as jade chest rapidly rose and fell, giving off a one hundred percent wild and sexy appearance. This made Su Luo who was looking on scorching hot and she swallowed mouthful after mouthful of saliva.

Su Luo gave Apothecary Leng a puzzled look. Apothecary Leng nodded his head and said. “His Highness Prince Jin’s exceptionally good natural aptitude is truly worthy of praise. Even in the unconscious state, he could advance to the seventh rank based on the circulation of his meridians.”

He advanced to the seventh rank this way? Su Luo’s pair of beautiful eyes moved around, an inconceivable shock flashed through their depths.

Suddenly, Apothecary Leng bleakly said. “Not good!”

## Chapter 142 – Dark mist (4)

---

Su Luo looked nervously at Nangong Liuyun.

She only saw his originally white as jade skin had black-colored mist rising out of all his pores. This dark mist became increasingly dense, and it almost completely shrouded his entire body.

At the same time, Apothecary Leng's expression now had a sudden, huge change!

In an instant, a brilliant light soared, tearing apart that dark mist. The entire sky was filled with shooting star-like lights that fell down.

They circled around Nangong Liuyun's body and then spread out in all four directions.

The ground violently shook, like the violent bellowing rage of an ancient beast that came from underground. It was as if something had awoken.

Brilliant lights soared, launching in all directions, and bringing along a dark force bent on destruction, as if it could devour everything in its path.

Apothecary Leng, who was closest to Nangong Liuyun, was shaken until he collapsed and immediately lost consciousness.

There was nowhere for Su Luo to run. At this critical moment, a burst of sharp dragon cry came from the adorable little dragon's mouth. A golden ray of light covered Su Luo, helping her avoid this dangerous attack.

But, the people outside were not as lucky.

Wherever the brilliant light passed, wretched and miserable cries could be heard. Immediately, blood rained everywhere, with more swirling in the air. The blood mist continued to spread, dropping off slices of dismembered body parts.

In a moment, a dark force that could destroy the heavens and wipe out the earth caused a period of violent quakes that shook the earth and mountains. In a flash, the entire manor was almost shaken into ruins.

People could only hear the sounds of houses crashing down, like the autumn leaves drifting in the rain and wind, tottering on the verge of collapse.

And soon, these structures that were being shaken were completely razed to the ground. The entire manor seemed as if an aircraft bomber had devastated it, thoroughly destroying everything. It was an area that withered away until it became dust.

Almost everyone in the manor was shaken until they became unconscious.

However at this moment, Nangong Liuyun's body rose and sat in the lotus position. His face was like autumn, bright as the stars, both hands intertwined in front of his chest, making strange hand gestures.

Su Luo rubbed her eyes, thinking that she must be seeing things.

In all directions, everything was in ruins.

However, in the middle of the ruins.

Nangong Liuyun sat in the lotus position, his entire body was shrouded in a mysterious, dark mist, unfathomable and strange.

At the same time, there was also an air of a king lording over the entire world, that made people revere, kneel and worship.

And then, an even more incredible and unbelievable thing!

Behind his back, a mysterious shadow appeared, it resembled a dragon but was not a dragon, it resembled a phoenix but was not a phoenix. It was terrible, frightening and strange. It had a kind of domineering aggressiveness that was formidable enough to destroy the sky and wipe out the earth, with a look of disdain that lorded over the world!

What-what was that thing?

How could it appear on Nangong Liuyun's back as a shadow?

What did those fifty green-colored crystal stones trigger in Nangong Liuyun?

Nangong Liuyun's bloodline.... was he really just a simple prince of this empire?

Su Luo's gaze was deep, she unblinkingly stared at Nangong Liuyun's solemn expression. That handsome, outstanding and mysterious appearance, her heart and thoughts were in complete chaos, full of questions.

At the same time.

The Dark Forest, Sinking Sunset Peak, on a hilltop.

An elderly person of indeterminate age, with white eyebrows and hair, sat cross-legged. He was in the midst of cultivating, and perhaps because a long time had passed, his body was covered in a thick layer of dust.

He suddenly opened his eyes, they were clear and shone brightly. He then looked towards a place in the east.

He looked for a long, long time.

Finally, his brows wrinkled, and he muttered to himself. "A prophecy from a thousand years ago, could it possibly be true? Darkness and chaos, the heavenly laws are hard to fathom, even this old man can't see it clearly, alas."

Ultimately, he just sighed and did nothing. He merely closed his eyes tightly and entered into a state of cultivation.

As if he had never woken up, never said a single word....

# Chapter 143 – His Highness Prince Jin (1)

---

At this moment, Nangong Liuyun was tottering as if he was about to fall to the ground.

Before Su Luo could react, there was already a figure flying as fast as lightning towards Nangong Liuyun. He caught Nangong Liuyun's limp body that was about to fall to the ground.

"Your Highness!" Ling Feng anxiously yelled out loud. At the same time, he exasperatedly roared at Su Luo. "How could you just stand there and watch as His Highness fell to the ground and not help him?!"

A faint feeling of guilt bubbled forth from Su Luo's heart.

Because Nangong Liuyun was very close to her, all Su Luo had to do was reach out and she would have been able to support him. However, she had been distracted and did not notice him falling.

Nangong Liuyun's demonic charming beauty was at its peak. This made him seem almost gentle and reserved.

After pushing the responsibility of holding Nangong Liuyun to Su Luo, Ling Feng rushed away. He very quickly and forcefully pulled Apothecary Leng by the shoulder and dragged him over. Ling Feng shoved Apothecary Leng right in front of Nangong Liuyun. "Quickly check on His Highness!"

Apothecary Leng was still dizzy from being hit by that assortment of brilliant rays of light. He didn't even have a chance to nap before being shaken awake by Ling Feng. Ling Feng did not even give Apothecary Leng time to fully wake up before dragging him over.

At this moment, Apothecary Leng's face was bruised and there was bloodstain on his forehead. It was quite clear he had been injured by the falling building

debris.

However, Ling Feng did not give him any time to breathe or recover before pulling him towards Nangong Liuyun. “Quickly! Quickly check over His Highness!”

Apothecary Leng grudgingly glared at him, like a scholar encountering a soldier. Even if what he wanted to say was justified, Ling Feng would not be able to comprehend. This type of military personnel only knew how to speak with brute force.

Although Apothecary Leng was very arrogant, in front of an expert martial artist like Ling Feng, he could not be haughty or arrogant.

What’s more, Apothecary Leng was also curious about what kind of profound mystery happened on His Highness Prince Jin’s body. How could his body be surrounded by a black-colored mist? Moreover, how had Prince Jin advanced to the seventh rank? He had never heard of anyone that could release such a formidable stream of aura or of anyone who could successfully shake all the buildings near his body into fine powder.

When Apothecary Leng checked Nangong Liuyun’s pulse, his eyebrows rose slightly. He had a puzzled expression on his face.

“How is he?” Seeing that Apothecary Leng had finally finished checking Nangong Liuyun, Ling Feng asked with a nervous expression. He unblinkingly stared at Apothecary Leng, afraid of missing any change of expression on his face.

“Strange, alas, very strange.” Apothecary Leng stroked his sparse goat-hair-like beard, his face full of bewilderment and incomprehension. “It shouldn’t be like this. How did it turn out like this?”

“It shouldn’t be like this? What did it turn into?” Su Luo concisely and comprehensively caught the main point.

Apothecary Leng frowned and said. “Currently His Highness Prince Jin’s entire body is full of power as if it was about to surge out, he should be weak instead.”

What he didn’t say was that High Highness Prince Jin had entered the seventh rank. Moreover, his seventh rank was much stronger than other people’s seventh rank...it really was unimaginable for other people.

“Will there be problems?” Ling Feng fiercely glared at Apothecary Leng.

“Right now, there aren’t any problems, as for in the future...this old man can not say.” Apothecary Leng had a complicated expression as he looked Nangong Liuyun up and down. His pair of eyes were radiant and sparkling as if he wanted to dissect Nangong Liuyun for research.

In any case, he could recognize and was aware that the person before his eyes was not just any person, but rather the unrivaled His Highness Prince Jin. So, he could only heave a sigh and suppress this restless way of thinking. He didn’t even dare to mention it.

Since there were no problems at the moment, then she does not need to worry excessively. Su Luo was relieved and lifted her eyes to Ling Feng. “This situation will require you to go and personally handle it.”

## Chapter 144 – His Highness Prince Jin (2)

---

With such a large commotion, how could the senior provincial officer not know? He would definitely dispatch troops over at the fastest speed.

Ling Feng looked at the disorderly surroundings. Mutilated corpses were wildly strewn about the place, it was indeed unsuitable for His Highness's recuperation. He nodded and said: "Indeed, considering that His Highness is still very weak at present, there's no need to meet with those outsiders."

Ling Feng carefully helped Nangong Liuyun onto the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage, before allowing Su Luo to get on board. Then he personally drove the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage towards a completely different direction in a rush.

His Highness Prince Jin had numerous assets. Even in this city alone, he had no less than three estates.

After about the length of time needed to burn a stick of incense, the Dragon Scaled Horse stopped at the entrance of a hot spring villa.

**Magnificent Mountain Villa.**

Built on the hillside, its courtyard was secluded and quiet.

Within the mountain villa was a lake, although very small, it was crystal clear upon viewing.

Ivy was sprawled all over its shores, dense and flourishing, appearing very fresh and delightful to the eye. There were rock garden made of piled up stones which possessed a natural charm.

Beside the lake, built near the water, was a loft, actually enshrouded in dense and hazy mist. Nestled between centuries-old trees and obscured by fog, it's faintly discernible appearance was fairytale-like.

**Su Luo entered, following behind Ling Feng.**

**The strange thing was, they had encountered not even a single person along the way here.**

**Opening the doors of that hazy loft, what appeared before Su Luo's eyes was an inner chamber as wide as a temple hall.**

**Within the huge inner chamber, mist floated about due to the dense heat, with white ivory screen made from elephant tusk to separate the inside and outside.**

**Walking around to behind the screen, Su Luo was inevitably surprised, secretly praising: Nangong Liuyun indeed lived up to his name! Such great expenditure! Such extravagant comfort!**

**That nearly hundred square meters bath actually was made from white jade tiles, and it could be seen at a glance that the water came from a hot spring, giving off waves of heat, tempting people to submerge and swim in it.**

**Each of those descending steps, were actually made of rare suet white jade! Not any other kind of green or yellow jade, but the really, really rare suet white jade!**

**Su Luo secretly became speechless!**

**In her previous world, just a small piece of suet white jade was already worth thousands of millions, yet here, Nangong Liuyun had actually used it to tile the stairs and step on it.**

**What kind of feet were his? Really, this was too, too extravagant! Even the sophisticated Su Luo could not help shaking her head.**

**Ling Feng placed Nangong Liuyun beside the hot spring and turned to Su Luo, looking stern before he spoke seriously: "It is now up to you to care for His Highness!" With that said, he coldly glared at Su Luo and turned to leave.**

**Su Luo was just about to agree when her mind suddenly jolted – eh, something's not right!**

**If it was anywhere else, it would still be fine, yet what location was this? Hot springs! A single man and woman sharing a bath, something was definitely not**

**right!**

**Su Luo loudly shouted at him: “Stop where you are, Ling Feng! Just where are you going?”**

**In any case, Ling Feng should remain here, should he not? If not... .. Su Luo glanced at the unconscious and faintly breathing Nangong Liuyun. Although his weak breaths made him seem rather harmless, somehow, she still not dared to think of sharing the same room with him.**

**Ling Feng paused and glanced at Nangong Liuyun with a complicated expression. Yet, when he turned his gaze to Su Luo, his icy tone allowed no refusal as he aggressively asked: “The Fourth Miss Su, may I ask if the reason why His Highness went to Sunset Mountains, was it not for you?”**

**“... ..” Su Luo could not help but admit that it was true.**

**“Was it not for you that His Highness forcefully stopped his recovery, thus making his injury even more serious?!” Ling Feng spoke in a browbeat manner.**

## Chapter 145 – His Highness Prince Jin (3)

---

“...” Su Luo was unable to refute this. Clearly it was a fact.

“His Highness’ original injury was under control and would have remained so, wasn’t it you who punched him until he spat out blood?!” Ling Feng step by step closed in on Su Luo, as if itching to swallow her.

“.....” The veins on Su Luo’s forehead was throbbing, it was in fact this way, however...

“Just now when His Highness was about to fall, the person closest to his side was you, the Fourth Miss Su. Wasn’t it you, who didn’t even try to help His Highness a little?” Ling Feng aggressively stated.

“.....” Su Luo heart was about to yell out she had been wronged but she choked it down. It was not because she didn’t want to help, but she was distracted by the shadow behind Nangong Liuyun’s back, okay?

How come after listening to Ling Feng’s complaints, even she herself felt that she was loathsome and deserved to be thrown into the eighteen layers of hell? Why had Nangong Liuyun became the model for the lofty figure of heroism who had sacrificed himself for others, huh?

Just when Su Luo appeared to be twisted up in confusion, Ling Feng had a sympathetic gaze as he glanced at her. He also silently looked at his master, His Highness, who was pretending to appear weak and harmless. The corner of his mouth moved silently and calmly turned around to leave. He also very kindly closed the thick black iron door while passing.

“Hey——” Seeing the black iron door was about to close, Su Luo suddenly feel like crying but lacked the tears.

This is just great, such a huge palace, with curtains flying, gorgeous, extravagant white jade, hot spring bath the size of a pond. The water from the

pond size bath shone clear and crystalline, such that you could see the bottom.

A dense, hot steam, floated vaguely around as if extending everywhere within the air.

Su Luo hesitantly stood in her original spot, unable to turn around yet.

All of sudden, Su Luo heard a heavy weighted object falling into the water. She immediately turned around and could not find Nangong Liuyun's figure. She only saw the surface of the hot spring water continuously bursting with bubbles while the water ripples reflected the sunlight.

"It couldn't be!" Su Luo hastily rushed to the place where Nangong Liuyun was located.

The pool of water was crystal clear, so Su Luo immediately saw the apparently sleeping Nangong Liuyun sinking to the bottom.

Had he rolled into the hot spring water?

Su Luo didn't even think. She stripped off her outerwear and gracefully dove into the beautiful hot spring water, striving to swim to where Nangong Liuyun was.

Very quickly she found him, Su Luo wanted to drag Nangong Liuyun out of the water.

When did Nangong Liuyun become so heavy? Su Luo inwardly grumbled bitterly in her heart.

She sank underwater while trying to tow Nangong Liuyun, but unfortunately she discovered that now his weight exceeded five hundred kilograms. No matter how she exerted her strength she could not move him the slightest.

Furthermore making her heart even more alarmed was that he held his breath underwater until his complexion turned purplish, as if any moment he would suffocate to death.

This man, he was fine, but how did he just roll into here?

Su Luo gave a depressed sigh in her heart! Today, how come so many strange things have happened? First was the weird shadow that appeared behind Nangong Liuyun, next, such a fine manor was destroyed successfully becoming

pieces of trash. Finally, his body suddenly seem to weigh five hundred kilograms? It really was a strange day.

Su Luo felt that she really should find some time to go to the temple and pray.

But in front of her eyes, how could she watch helplessly as Nangong Liuyun suffocate to death?

Although Su Luo was almost suffocating from holding her breath, after some quick thought, she finally closed her eyes and very fiercely took the initiative to deliver her sweet lips to help pass some much needed air to Nangong Liuyun.

At the bottom of the crystalline hot spring, on the white jade that was used as tiling, there was a pair of immortal looking beautiful man and woman whose lips were locked lovingly and inseparably.

The close-eyed Su Luo didn't notice, Nangong Liuyun who was close at hand had raised his eyebrows. An amused and interested smile flashed across his face.

He had clearly regained consciousness a long time ago! He clearly fell into the hot spring pool on purpose! He obviously calculated that Su Luo would try to save him!

But Su Luo does not know. Right now she was silently cursing him while passing air to him through the lips.

## Chapter 146 – High Highness Prince Jin (4)

---

After Su Luo had satisfactorily passed enough air to Nangong Liuyun and was about to leave, in a split second, his passive body unexpectedly moved. He seized both of her lips, his nimble and hot tongue entered her mouth to besiege and plunder.

The surging passion burst into flames as their lips and tongues connected. Nangong Liuyun drunkenly kissed her, his large hands sliding down to loosen Su Luo's belt. He caressed her skin that was smooth as silk and white as snow.

Both of Su Luo's lips were plump, enticing him to intensely suck on them even more. Her body had become weak and boneless, completely lacking any strength to resist.

Suddenly, Su Luo felt something was not quite right and immediately regained her senses.

Nangong Liuyun....He was actually not unconscious!

It was only now that Su Luo realized she had been played by this man! She had been so concerned about him that in order to save his life, she had taken the initiative to give him air to breathe. However, he had actually used her concern to deceive her!

Really, her efforts had been eaten by a dog. Good intentions had not received good compensation, it was like a dog biting the hand that fed it!

Su Luo furiously pushed Nangong Liuyun away, panting with rage as she swam to the surface. She was so angry that she walked directly towards the shore.

At the bottom of the pool, Nangong Liuyun let out a sigh. His Luo girl was truly not easy to deceive.

**“Luo girl.” Nangong Liuyun surfaced from the water, calling out to stop the raging Su Luo from leaving.**

**His voice was like the sound of nature, charming and deep, with a touch of frustration.**

**Su Luo’s figure stopped for a split second, but then continued to leave with large strides.**

**“Just like this, you think you can escape this king?” Nangong Liuyun’s voice had a touch of self mockery and sorrow at being abandoned.**

**Su Luo’s figure stopped, giving him only a view of her indifferent back.**

**Nangong Liuyun had obviously played a trick on her, why was he making it seem as if she was the loathsome and unpardonable party?**

**“Be good, come here.” Seeing her pause, Nangong Liuyun’s mood improved. He shallowly smiled and beckoned to her with his hand.**

**However, Su Luo merely gave a cold hump while still stubbornly presenting her back to him.**

**Nangong Liuyun saw that he was failing to convince Su Luo to return so he changed his tone of voice. Nangong Liuyun’s voice became demonically charming and deep with sadness as he dejectedly said. “This king felt that he had slept for quite a while. I thought that I will never wake up again. I also thought that I would never see Luo girl again. Don’t you want to see this king’s appearance after successfully waking up?”**

**His tone was miserable and wretched, like a little puppy that had been discarded by his owner begging for a trace of pity from his master.**

**Su Luo was immediately infuriated to the point that she wanted to laugh.**

**Please! You are the legendary His Highness Prince Jin who looked disdainfully down at the world, okay? A grand majestic seventh ranked expert, okay? How could you act so weak and beseech someone like me? How could you act so cute and shameless towards me?**

**But damn it, when she had heard that sentence of never waking up, Su Luo felt pain squeezing the deepest part of her heart for a while.**

Su Luo recalled these past few days when she had been by Nangong Liuyun's side taking care of him, how she had felt apprehensive and alarmed because of him. She had also felt ashamed and remorseful. Su Luo had repeatedly blamed herself for that punch. She suddenly felt the rims of her eyes begin to ache and experienced a kind of unprecedented feeling of being wronged.

How could he tease her like this?!

However, how could Su Luo who habitually concealed her feelings in the depths of darkness show her weakness in front of others?

After settling her emotions, Su Luo unhurriedly turned around and displayed a tranquil expression that did not contain a single ripple.

She step by step approached Nangong Liuyun, finally crouching down by his side. The corner of her mouth lifted into a taunting and sarcastic smile. "His Highness Prince Jin seems to have such peculiar interests, like using one's own life to play jokes. It's a lot of fun, isn't it?"

Her laugh was very dark and terribly sinister.

## Chapter 147 – His Highness Prince Jin (5)

---

Nangong Liuyun pretended that he had been wronged. “If I didn’t use these tactics, then how could I get Luo girl to notice this king?”

Su Luo gritted her teeth, itching to skin him alive. “When did you regain consciousness?”

She should have realized it earlier. Why else would Ling Feng have become so talkative all of a sudden, forcing her to stay behind to take care of Nangong Liuyun? If he didn’t have Nangong Liuyun’s order, how could he dare?

Nangong Liuyun knew he could not fool such a clever girl, so he tried to change the topic. “Extremely smart girls are not cute. Luo girl, help this king take a bath, okay?”

“When have you ever seen this miss being cute?” Su Luo coldly smiled.

Act cute? Help him bathe? Did he want her to take a knife to scrub him with during his bath? It’s amazing that he had the gall to say this!

Sure enough, he had already regained consciousness in that ruined manor. He deliberately pretended to be weak to deceive her!

“You are even more cute like this.” Immediately after he finished speaking, Nangong Liuyun’s abruptly closed his hand. In the next moment, the steps that Su Luo had been standing on disintegrated. She didn’t even have time to evade when her entire body suddenly flew backwards. Su Luo fell into the hot spring pool with a loud splashing sound.

By some strange coincidence, both of her legs ended up wrapped around Nangong Liuyun’s waist with their eyes facing each other.

With such a posture and such an environment, if others were to enter, how

could their imagination not run wild?

“Sharp mouthed and soft hearted girl, look around. Your body doesn’t lie. It already threw itself at this king.” The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth turned up into a demonic and flattering smile that was extremely hateful.

This Nangong Liuyun! Su Luo gritted her teeth. She felt that being together with this man, if there was a day she was not infuriated with him, then that meant she had already died from being mad at him! In short, she would eventually die from being continuously angered by him.

Nangong Liuyun’s enchanting face was rosy and shone like gems from being steamed by the water. With a demonically charming smile, he said. “Obedient Luo Luo, what are you mad about? Could it be that what this king said is wrong?”

“Release me.” Su Luo clenched her teeth to calm down her emotions and indifferently opened her mouth to speak.

“It was you who threw yourself into my arms and refused to let go.” Nangong Liuyun hoisted his chin and said this with a straight face. Instead of releasing Su Luo, his hold on her became even tighter.

Su Luo grabbed a snow-white ice-cold dagger from her space. She pressed the dagger against his ivory white chest, coldly smiled, and said. “Keep your hands to yourself, okay?”

“Then it’s okay for this king to use his mouth, right?” Nangong Liuyun blinked his beautiful eyes innocently at her, seeking her approval.

From their first meeting when he had set the betting terms with her of victor would become king and loser had to warm the bed, she knew that Nangong Liuyun’s words had a double meaning. He absolutely did not mean he intended to use his mouth to speak.

Su Luo’s complexion darkened and she threateningly said. “Don’t assume that I wouldn’t dare to take action, since this miss can hit you until you spit out blood. I’m not afraid to use this to kill you!”

God knows why, Nangong Liuyun started to smile. His smile was exceedingly enticing to all living things. That smile on the edge of his lips made his entire

body even more enchanting. His smile drew people's gazes to him, making them unable to look away.

Nangong Liuyun completely ignored that ice-cold dagger at his chest. He extended his slender white hand to pick up Su Luo's ink black hair that was soaked by the hot water. With a sinister air that had the power to make people tremble, he said. "Adorable Luo girl, this king likes you more and more. What's to be done? From now on, I will never be willing to part with you."

Nangong Liuyun paid no attention to the sharp dagger pressed against his chest. It was as if he was ignoring the fact that with just a little push, the dagger would thrust into his heart, piercing it like paper.

He merely unhurriedly moved his lower body, slowly approaching Su Luo.

Both people met face to face, nose to nose and red lips to red lips.

They were so close, each could feel the air that the other person was breathing out.

An ambiguous atmosphere started to solidify in the air.

## Chapter 148 – His Highness Prince Jin (6)

---

“Release me!” A thread of helplessness flashed across Su Luo’s heart.

Damn it! How could she have forgotten? This man was ruthless towards others but even more toward himself!

Before when he forced her to use a dagger to pierce himself, it should have been sufficient to illustrate this point. So hateful, she had actually forgotten and she dared to hold a dagger to threaten him again! Damn it!

The corner of Nangong Liuyun’s mouth was still lifted into a careless smile. He lowered his head, his distance to Su Luo was decreasing, getting closer and closer. Seeing her vexed expression, he gave a knowing, demonically charming smile. Then once more he seized her breath.

Damn it, this guy should just go and die!

Right now Su Luo had provided a cage to entrap someone else, but instead she maneuvered around so much while leading the prey, that she had ended up trapping herself inside.

Could she be so ruthless as to stab him? Clearly she couldn’t do it.

It had been very difficult for her to save him, so how could she once again injure him?

Therefore the dagger in her hand quietly fell to the floor.

Nangong Liuyun released her. He laughed wantonly with a demonic charm.

Out of the corner of his eyes, he saw that dagger sink underwater. When it hit the ground, Nangong Liuyun’s mood seemed to have become extremely good. His entire persons seem to be radiating with health and vigor as if he had obtained his life’s greatest desire. It was so great that that the atmosphere around him also brightened.

He found that he had discovered Su Luo's weakness. His Luo girl was truly cute, really cute.

Just at this time.

All of a sudden a ruthless, cold expression flashed through Nangong Liuyun's eyes.

What Su Luo did not know was right now, outside on top of that thousand year old ancient tree a sharp feathered arrow was being aimed at her vital point.

This was a master whose entire body was shrouded in black cloth, with not even a strand of hair exposed.

He was hidden in the tree branches, concealing his figure among the lush leaves, motionless, like a hidden snake waiting for the right time to spray out its poison to kill a person.

Suddenly his hand loosened, and the feathered arrow split the sky, bursting out as it was murderously launched toward Su Luo.

This arrow, due to it being blocked by the window, had gone completely undetected by Su Luo. Even if she became aware of it she still couldn't have avoided it with her level of skill.

This was because the person who launched the arrow had high martial arts skills, absolutely above the sixth rank, completely not someone Su Luo could stop.

Due to Su Luo's instinct that guard against danger, her body slightly trembled. She instinctively wanted to dodge.

Just at this moment, Nangong Liuyun lowered his head and once again seized her red lips. He wrapped her entire body within his embrace. He protected her by wrapping her so tightly that they were joined seamlessly.

Just then, that bright silvery arrow broke through the window and entered, carrying with it the sound of thunder, five thousand kilograms of force, and a murderous air.

If Nangong Liuyun hadn't advanced to the seventh rank, then he would either have had to use his body to block this arrow or let Su Luo die; these would have

been the only two possible choices.

The enemy was forcing Nangong Liuyun to choose: either choose to save his own life or save the woman who was a good-for-nothing!

It was clearly obvious that the enemy figured that Nangong Liuyun loved himself and his own life the most. It was also evident that the other party wanted Su Luo to look on helplessly and clearly see how cruel Nangong Liuyun will treat her by letting her die.

The person who launched the arrow had calculated all these details, included all the possible circumstances into this plan. Now the black masked person's gloomy and cold expression had a cruel smirk, as if victory was insight.

However, the reality made him frown.

Because he would never have anticipated that in such a short time that even with Nangong Liuyun's serious internal injuries, he would advance to the seventh rank.

Could only see Nangong Liuyun caused the pool of water to stir up like a geyser, the white colored water changed into a dragon in midair, silently roaring and swallowed that arrow.

Swift like the wind, quick like lightening.

Moreover, when Nangong Liuyun counterattacked, he was unruffled as before still kissing Su Luo. His figure was as steady as a boulder, with not a bit of tremor.

# Chapter 149 – Secrets revealed (1)

---

Therefore, even as murderous intent surrounded them and under circumstances where a moment of carelessness could prove fatal, Su Luo was completely protected within Nangong Liuyun's embrace. Confused from the lack of air and with her vision blocked, Su Luo was completely unaware of the truth despite sensing that something was not quite right.

It was only after the battle had settled that Nangong Liuyun unhurriedly released her. Seeing Su Luo repeatedly inhaling large mouthfuls of air, he smiled with demonic charm. "Do you like this king kissing you?"

Su Luo was infuriated to the point that she was speechless. In the end, she just glared at him and picked up her dagger to leave. However, all of a sudden, her figure stood still.

When did such a large amount of fine powder accumulate in the hot spring pool? Moreover, it looked like the powder was actually black iron?

Additionally, its original shape could be vaguely seen to resemble that of an arrow.

Su Luo's line of sight shot towards the window.

A finger-sized hole could be seen there. Its notch was smooth and round, not too big or small and just the right size for an arrow to enter.

Su Luo rolled her eyes and fixed them decidedly on Nangong Liuyun. She stared at him coldly and solemnly, yet she did not speak a single word.

Nangong Liuyun stood up from the hot spring pool, completely exposing his slender and youthful body before Su Luo.

Conspicuously messy long hair as pitch black as ink draped over his broad shoulders, dripping rivulets of water droplets. Crimson Cornelian cherries

decorated that refined white porcelain-like chest. Broad shoulders, narrow buttocks and a pair of straight and slender legs drew a perfect outline, tempting others to sin. He was so captivating that it was almost criminal.

His unique and incomparable face bore an enticing smile that could only have been made by heaven and beautiful profoundly mysterious eyes as pitch-black as an abyss. When these orbs gazed into Su Luo's eyes, they were filled with intense tenderness that was hard to describe. It was completely intoxicating. He caressed her white and porcelain-like face and with a charmingly deep voice and demonic smile carrying a touch of playfulness, he said. "Are you satisfied with this king's body?"

He had changed the subject!

The corner of Su Luo's mouth perked up into a shallow smile of distinct meaning and lightly pushed away his hands. "What does it have to do with me?"

Nangong Liuyun's expression sunk and become slightly dark. His eyes carried a hint of cold-blooded cruelty. "Luo girl, what are you angry about? This king will give you justice, okay?"

Simply hypocritical!

A taunting and sarcastically cold laugh flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

He clearly knew that the opponent had been aiming for her, but persistently pretended nothing had happened right to her face and tried to mislead her. Did Nangong Liuyun think that she was an idiot? Did he really assume that she could not see that the arrow launched through the window had been shot at her? Did he mistakenly deem her as a good-for-nothing that understood nothing?

Who was he protecting? Who was he defending? Did he really believe that she knew nothing?

"Nangong Liuyun, right now I won't look into this because I don't have the ability. However, don't you dare go overboard with bullying me!" Su Luo did not want to be entangled with this issue.

He could protect that person without distinguishing between right and wrong, but he should not assume an adoring manner in front of her to lure her in.

Nangong Liuyun's complexion momentarily darkened and although those eyes contained a callus and stern expression, they could not conceal that passing flash of doting. Why couldn't his Luo girl just be slightly stupid, a little less intelligence would be good?

"Luo Luo, do you trust me?" They were tender and soft words that though cruel, carried a hard to describe hopefulness.

Nangong Liuyun stared at Su Luo, his deep and bottomless eyes contained so many words he wanted to say but couldn't.

Nangong Liuyun knew this proud and independent woman in front of his eyes was strong. She was proud and aloof. She clearly distinguished between love and hate with a non-sentimental cold-bloodedness. She was intelligent, wise, and farsighted. She had thorough and careful observation skills. Her pair of eyes shone too brightly, as if she could see through to a person's heart. All secrets in front of her would be exposed.

Su Luo looked at Nangong Liuyun. His pair of bright eyes revealed too much, too much information, almost too much for her to bear.

## Chapter 150 – Secrets Revealed (2)

---

He treated the Jade Lake Fairy with such an indulgent, doting manner. Did he truly love her or was there a hidden reason?

Everybody had a right to their own secrets.

He did not explain and she did not ask.

Hidden in Su Luo's eyes was a flash of pride. "You want me to believe you? Keep working hard."

This lady's trust, how could it be given to just anybody?

Hearing that, Nangong Liuyun was surprised momentarily. An instant later, he gave a hearty laugh and looked extremely pleased. "Good, good. This king will continue working hard, you just wait and see."

After the incident that had previously occurred, his Luo girl did not flatly refuse him. She had given him some leeway. This was excellent, it was very good.

After Nangong Liuyun and Su Luo had stayed at the hot springs for ten days, they headed towards the Capital.

The Capital.

Due to being delayed by the incident with Nangong Liuyun, Su Luo still had not returned home. However, Liu Ruohua had already arrived back at the Capital.

Liu Ruohua's team had been completely annihilated and she had also lost an arm. This made Liu ChengXiang particularly angry.

Liu Ruohua told her father everything. After she mentioned what had happened with His Highness Prince Jin, Liu ChengXiang's face turned ugly. His eyes flickered and were unsettled.

Finally, with a pale face, he commanded, "His Highness Prince Jin is cunning

and unfathomable. If he takes action to help, it's out of friendship. When he doesn't take action, then that's to be expected as that is his normal behavior. Even if you bring the issue right in front of His Highness's face, it would still get the same response. Forget it, go back and sequester yourself at home. From now on, be good and stay at home. Don't go out and cause trouble."

When Liu ChangXiang's eyes landed on Liu Ruohua's cut-off arm, his eyes flashed with a cold, cruel look.

Losing that arm, how could she still marry into the royal family? This daughter.....has already been abandoned by him.

In the manor, Liu Ruohua who had lost all future prospects began a life of being bullied by her sisters. Living through such days was driving her mad. Her originally troublesome heart grew angrier by the day.

When Liu Ruohua remembered that the person beside His Highness Prince Jin was Su Luo, it made her missing limb ache with jealousy!

Su Luo, if I can't enjoy good days anymore, you had better not dare to think about living well! If I'm going to hell, I'll drag everybody along with me!

That same day, Liu Ruohua made an appointment with Su Xi. She thought to inform Su Xi about Su Luo and His Highness Prince Jin's relationship.

However, Su Xi had been sent away by her school to learn through experience. Therefore, it was Su Wan, the third Miss from Su family, that arrived at the restaurant.

Liu Ruohua did not beat around the bush and got straight to the point. "Su Wan, has your family's Su Luo returned home yet?"

Su Wan felt this was a strange question. Su Luo clearly was grounded at home and not allowed to set foot outside. How could she return when she had never left?

Just mentioning Su Luo, Su Wan wanted to grind her teeth.

Last time, it was clearly Su Luo who injured her. In the end, her own father did not take her side. He had even grounded her along with Su Luo. If not for her past few days of good behavior, it would be hard to say whether or not she

would have been grounded for the entire three months.

Su Wan only coldly smiled. “Miss Liu, your words are laughable. My family’s fourth little sister behaved improperly and was grounded as punishment by our father. Unless three to five months have passed, it would be impossible for her to leave home. Where could she have come back from?”

Liu Ruohua heard what was said and immediately became stumped. She stared blankly at Su Wan. Suddenly, Liu Ruohua’s eyes glistened radiantly. She excitedly grabbed Su Wan’s hands, then urgently and loudly asked. “Is what you have said the truth? Su Luo really was grounded by the Great General Su?!”

Liu Ruohua, with her entire body trembling continuously, had stood up in excitement. When Su Wan saw this, she felt that this situation was exceedingly strange, so for a period of time could not reply.

Liu Ruohua was so anxious that she had started to stamp her feet. “Reply quickly! Was Su Luo really grounded by the Great General Su? Is this true?”

## Chapter 151 – Secrets revealed (3)

---

“Naturally, it’s true. Moreover, it’s already been this way for about a month.” Su Wan frowned and looked at Liu Ruohua with a baffled expression. She then glanced at Liu Ruohua’s cut-off wrist. A look of disgust and contempt flashed through Su Wan’s eyes.

However, Liu Ruohua suddenly started to laugh uproariously. She laughed so hard that her eyes teared up and was so excited that she continuously banged on the table.

Could this person have gone insane? Su Wan watched Liu Ruohua’s crazy appearance with disdain and secretly complained.

Liu Ruohua normally gave off a noble, graceful, and very respectable appearance. However, at this meeting, why was there such a huge change in her comportment? It was as if she had fallen from high above the clouds into a pile of mud.

“Su Luo, you will definitely die! You will definitely die!” Liu Ruohua was in the middle of a bout of insanity. She was so hysterical that she started to cry.

Su Wan’s expression changed. She also wanted Su Luo to quickly encounter some bad luck. If Liu Ruohua could eliminate Su Luo, then Su Wan naturally would endorse her actions with both hands.

Therefore, Su Wan asked. “What happened? You should start talking.”

A malicious light radiated from Liu Ruohua’s eyes. She stared fixedly at Su Wan and word by word said. “Su Luo was never locked away at your manor to ponder over her mistakes. She went to the Sunset Mountain Range!”

“Not possible!” Without even stopping to think, Su Wan vetoed Liu Ruohua’s

statement by saying, “Su Luo is a natural-born good-for-nothing. How could she possibly go to the Sunset Mountain Range? You must have mistaken her for someone else.”

“It’s true! That person really was Su Luo. I absolutely was not mistaken!” Liu Ruohua was so excited that her hands started to wave around. She malevolently glared at Su Wan. “She went there together with His Highness Prince Jin, this I am certain of!”

“Impossible! She doesn’t even know High Highness Prince Jin, how could she go there with him? Moreover, what kind of person is His Highness Prince Jin? How could he be together with Su Luo? You are talking about two completely different stations, like comparing a celestial immortal from the heavens with a pile of mud on earth. What kind of evil intentions do you harbor? This is simply too absurd!”

Su Wan completely forgot about her ladylike image and also started to bang on the table as she loudly rejected everything.

“I know that it’s hard for you to believe, but facts are facts. Su Luo went to the Sunset Mountain Range with His Highness Prince Jin. Also...hey, hey! Do you think she really is a good-for-nothing?” Liu Ruohua smiled sinisterly, full of maliciousness.

In the beginning, she had also thought that Su Luo was a good-for-nothing. However, when Liu Ruohua and her companions attempted to kill Su Luo to silence her, she had run away faster than a rabbit during the chase. If even Liu Weiming couldn’t catch Su Luo, how could she possibly be a good-for-nothing?

That loathsome girl was a tiger pretending to be a pig. She had fooled everyone.

But, this matter was related to His Highness Prince Jin and was also connected to the Jade Lake’s Fairy. Therefore, Liu Ruohua knew where to draw the line and did not let out any irresponsible remarks.

Su Wan clenched her fist and anxiously walked around the room in circles. After a long while, she stopped. She firmly looked at Liu Ruohua. “You are certain that the person you saw in the Sunset Mountain Range was Su Luo? You are not mistaken?”

“Absolutely no mistake! I injured her wrist before and the scars are still there. Furthermore, His Highness Prince Jin clearly called her Luo girl. She herself also admitted that she is Su Luo! Therefore, I absolutely can not be wrong!” Liu Ruohua stated firmly and unhesitantly. She was very resolute.

His Highness Prince Jin....Su Wan’s eyes were full of maliciousness with murderous intent. That slut of a girl! Even though Su Luo had her engagement broken off, she had still managed to catch the crown prince’s attention. Now, she had transferred her attention to having a relationship with His Highness Prince Jin? Good, very good. It was clear that Su Wan needed to give Su Luo a generous gift.

“Furthermore, your family’s fourth Miss also offended the Jade Lake’s Fairy. You guys should be very careful. If the Jade Lake Palace refuses to let the matter drop, then your family will get destroyed together with all of Su Manor!”

## Chapter 152 – Secrets revealed (4)

---

**“The Jade Lake’s Fairy?” Su Luo had even managed to offend that immortal fairy-like person from above?**

**“The Jade Lake’s Fairy and His Highness Prince Jin are the perfect immortal couple. Su Luo inserted herself in between them. If it was you, wouldn’t you be mad?” Liu Ruohua mixed some truth into the false information to mislead Su Wan.**

**If it was true, then Su Luo will definitely die! That Jade Lake Palace had an existence as high as the imperial family, yet she dared to offend them!**

**“Very good, I’m extremely grateful that you gave me this information. If any actions were taken, I will personally inform you.” Su Wan lifted up her skirt and hurriedly left.**

**If the information was accurate, this time, she will definitely get father to kick Su Luo out of the family.**

**Seeing the back view of Su Wan who couldn’t wait to leave, Liu Ruohua’s smile was incomparably malicious.**

**Su Luo ah Su Luo, do you like the gift this lady sent you? If the Great Su General knew that you snuck out secretly and also offended the Jade Lake Palace’s Fairy, well then....**

**Su Wan was also smart. She didn’t completely trust Liu Ruohua’s words. Therefore, she would personally check out the situation first. Once she had confirmed this information, she would then invite her father over to witness Su Luo’s deception.**

**Su Wan and her maid unhurriedly walked towards Su Luo’s decrepit courtyard.**

## **The Courtyard.**

**Lu Luo right now was sitting in the courtyard sunbathing while sewing. Lu Luo was striving to make a new garment for the Miss before she returned so that Su Luo would be pleasantly surprised.**

**Basking in the sunlight while doing needlework, that appearance would seem very leisurely and content. However, only Lu Luo knew how apprehensive her heart was.**

**It had been more than a month since the Miss left. Without any news, she didn't even know where the Miss had gone. She would sometimes secretly think, perhaps the Miss had taken the chance to run away?**

**While the restless Lu Luo was sewing, the bang, bang, bang, sounds of knocking on the door resounded.**

**Lu Luo was so startled that the entire thick, long needle pierced into her flesh. The pain almost made her cry out loud.**

**She nervously and uneasily looked at the door that was knocked on until it shook. Her heart was thumping like a deer caught in headlights. She was so anxious that she didn't know what to do.**

**For the past month, nobody had knocked on this door. Even the meals had been delivered through a small hole on the edge of the wall, she had to go over to pick it up. This door hadn't been opened since Su Luo's punishment started.**

**Didn't the Great General say the Miss would be locked in for three months? How could it be so fast...**

**What had happened? If it was discovered that the Miss was not in the courtyard, then at that time...this result was too terrible to think about. Lu Luo was so scared that her face became pale. Her body started to tremble, she was so nervous that she almost couldn't breathe.**

**Since she was locked in, this proved that they had to be in here. Then, should she open the door?**

**To open or to not open the door?**

Lu Luo anxiously watched the door that had dust falling down from all the knocking. She hoped that the other party would automatically leave after not getting a response. However, she was disappointed in this respect.

Su Wan knocked for a while. The longer this went on without any response from the inside, it made Su Wan who was initially dubious now believe Liu Ruohua's news close to eighty percent.

If Su Luo was not guilty, then why would she be afraid to open the door?

The corner of Su Wan's mouth turned into a cold smile and she commanded her servants. "Knock on the door, strongly bang on it. Even if it is smashed into pieces, this lady will be responsible for the consequences!"

Su Wan rarely got the chance to be so aggressive at the Manor, but in Su Luo's courtyard, she could always be as unrestrained as she wanted.

Lu Luo was worried until she ran around in circles, wishing her Miss would literally drop from the sky and appear now. She only heard a huge noise, a boom sound, then the originally not-so-stable door loudly toppled over, breaking into pieces.

## Chapter 153 – Secrets revealed (5)

---

From the doorway, Su Wan's face displayed malicious intent.

Su Wan unhurriedly walked in and looked everywhere. She could not find Su Luo's figure, so her already eighty percent certainty went up to one hundred percent.

In regards to Su Luo's recent temperament, she would not be very easy to bully. However, her door had been smashed to pieces yet she still hadn't come out. The only possibility left was that she really was not here!

Su Wan leisurely took the measure of the insistently trembling Lu Luo. With a smile that was not a smile she asked. "Lu Luo girl, what are you afraid of? Does this Miss look that frightening?"

"No, no! The third Miss looks as beautiful as a flower, rarer than any under the heavens. You absolutely are a beauty among the beautiful people!" Lu Luo earnestly praised while her heart secretly complained. What was up with the third Miss? Why hadn't she left yet?

Su Wan was all smiles as she looked at Lu Luo. She coldly smirked and said. "Since it's like this, how come you can't even look at this lady? Could it be that you have done something shameful?"

Lu Luo was so scared that her face went pale. She continued to quiver while she tried to maintain an unyielding tone. Lu Luo released a hollow laugh. "The Third Miss really likes to joke around. This servant, how could this servant have done something shameful? No way, I absolutely have not!"

Lu Luo clearly was not adept at lying. Her parched tone of voice and body language revealed too much, especially her insufficient voice and lack of confidence.

Su Wan was even more pleased. She sneered even more coldly. “Really haven’t? How about your Miss? She has not done anything shameful, has she?”

Lu Luo secretly bitterly complained in her heart. Could it be that the third Miss had come prepared? Her words clearly meant to insinuate something.

“The fourth Miss also has done nothing wrong!” Lu Luo stated with a deadpan expression, her tone was resolute and decisive. In the end, she even solemnly nodded her head.

“Tell your Miss to come out. As sisters, the two of us should spend time together. Perhaps she can coax this lady into a good mood, then this lady will have mercy and say something good in front of father to release you guys from this courtyard.” Su Wan darkly pressured Lu Luo even more.

Lu Luo’s heart became even more wretched.

If her Miss could come out, she would have appeared already. Why would she need to watch you, the third Miss, strut around?

Miss, ah, Miss, if you don’t come out now, there won’t be another chance to come out again. Also, you will never get another chance to see your servant Lu Luo again....

Su Wan sinisterly swept Lu Luo a glance, her footsteps never stopped and she unhurriedly walked around. She looked in all directions while walking and finally walked into Su Luo’s inner room.

Lu Luo’s heart became extremely nervous, her body was also trembling uncontrollably.

She will definitely die, maybe today she would be flogged to death....

Lu Luo’s sweat kept dropping down from her forehead, her chest and back were soaked through with cold sweat.

Su Wan had a boastful and proud smile on her face as her slender white hand pushed open the bedroom door— —

Lu Luo closed both eyes as if waiting for death to arrive.

Time seemed to have frozen at this moment.

It was a huge bedroom, a quick glance showed the room contained a few very old-fashioned and broken pieces of furniture. Simply looking, a person could take everything in at once but there wasn't a trace of Su Luo's silhouette.

Good, very good. That slut Su Luo was definitely not here!

At this moment, Su Wan 's entire body seemed to relax. She appeared to be as cheerful as the clear and boundless sky. She turned her head and with a face full of smiles looked at Lu Luo. Her smiling expression was sinister and cold-blooded. As sharp as a sword tip, it pierced at Lu Luo's heart.

"Ah ha ha ha, good, very good!" Su Wan did not say another word. She simply turned and left.

Su Luo had dared to secretly sneak out of the family home during her confinement period. This offense was more than sufficient to get her kicked out of Su family.

After confirming the facts, Liu Ruohua's words were eighty percent trustworthy.

In that case, added to Su Luo's crime was that she had dared to offend the Jade Lake's Fairy....chuckle...Su Luo, ah, Su Luo. After you return, you'll have to suffer and just wait for father to tie you up and bring you to the Jade Lake Palace to apologize for your crimes!

## Chapter 154 – Secrets revealed (6)

---

“Honorable Father! Fourth little sister has disappeared. I have also heard that she has brought shame to our family while outside. We have been unaware of her actions.”

Su Wan had run enthusiastically towards the Great General Su’s study. She covered up the excitement in her eyes and as much as possible tried to employ a tranquil tone.

The writing brush in the Great General Su’s hand stopped. He raised his eyes. His sharp eyes like lightning stuck Su Wan and with a strict tone he said. “What rubbish are you spouting?”

“Honorable Father, what I have said is the truth! That slut Su Luo...Honorable Father, you think that my fourth little sister is still locked in her courtyard as punishment. However, she had already left home a while ago. I have heard rumors from outside that she had even gone so far as to offend the Jade Lake’s Fairy!”

In order to lure Su Zian to personally check on Su Luo, Su Wan without any qualms dropped the bomb regarding the matter of the Jade Lake’s Fairy.

Su Zian’s expression changed.

Of course he knew of the Jade Lake’s Fairy’s background.

He understood more than anyone else the influential force behind the Jade Lake’s Fairy.

Su Luo had actually offended the Jade Lake’s Fairy? Where had this rumor come from?

However, even if it was baseless there could still be a reason. If nothing had

happened, then why would others spread such a rumor?

Su Zian tossed aside the brush and stood up. “Is what you have said true?” In regards to this matter, even though he had doubts, he had already halfway believed it to be true.

“Naturally, it’s the truth! Honorable Father, when this daughter heard the news, I initially also did not believe it. However, in order to secure the safety and reputation of this family, this daughter had gone to fourth younger sister’s courtyard. This daughter swears that fourth younger sister was really not there!” Su Wan wanted to immediately make this vow.

If Su Wan managed to persuade Su Zian to go look, this will force him to personally witness that Su Luo was not there. Then, at that time, even if Su Luo had not offended the Jade Lake’s Fairy, the crime of escaping her punishment would already have been placed on her body.

Su Zian’s calm manner changed slightly. He thought about it and solemnly said, “Since it’s already this way, then let’s go take a look.”

Because this may involve the Jade Lake Palace, Su Zian’s heart was also somewhat worried.

The Jade Lake Palace in this empire existed as a superpower simply due to their ancestral elder. This ancestral elder who had been in closed door cultivation for many years was a tenth-ranked expert. You could count the number of a tenth-ranked experts in the entire world on one hand.

It was said that he was Eastern Ling Empire’s Sea Stabilizing Divine Needle. With him present, there was no way to wipe out the Eastern Ling Empire. With such a status, who wouldn’t fear and revere the Jade Lake Palace?

Under such conditions, who would dare to offend the Jade Lake Palace? Who would dare to offend the Jade Lake Palace’s favorite child, the Jade Lake’s Fairy? Wouldn’t it be like courting death?

If Su Luo really had dared to offend the Jade Lake’s Fairy, then Su Zian’s first action would be to tie up Su Luo and personally escort her to the Jade Lake Palace. He would present her to the other party, allowing the Jade Lake Palace to handle the punishment. No only would he not feel sad, he would even applaud

and praise the punishment.

Su Zian quickly trotted toward Su Luo's courtyard.

Following behind him, Su Wan's heart jumped with excitement. Such enthusiasm in her eyes could not be covered up.

"Father, let's go in. Fourth younger sister really is not in there." When she saw Su Zian indeterminately standing outside the door, Su Wan tried to persuade him with these words.

"Ah." Su Zian lifted up his robe. His footstep was steady as he entered the courtyard without any announcement.

His expression was solemn, respectable, coldly strict, and contained an unknown gloominess.

Lu Luo nervously came out to welcome them. When she saw Su Zian, she hurriedly kneeled down to pay her respects to the Great General Su.

Su Zian threw a quick, cold glance at the kneeling Lu Luo. With both hands behind his back, he had an arrogant appearance. "Where is the fourth Miss? Is she still in the room?"

Lu Luo trembled with fear but did not dare to raise her head. Her voice was thin and feeble like a mosquito. "Present, present. The Miss is in her room."

Su Wan sneered out loud. "Death is at hand and yet you still dare to quibble. Fourth younger sister is clearly not in her room. Such a lowly girl like you dares to speak so casually. You actually don't want to live?"

## Chapter 155 – Secrets revealed (7)

---

Lu Luo's entire body was trembling, but she still firmly insisted. "The Miss really is in her room. This is the absolute truth. The Miss these days never steps foot outside of the door. She had been copying the sacred scriptures inside her room as blessing prayers for Lord Su. How could the third Miss slander the Fourth Miss in such a manner?"

"Sneer—," Su Wan let out a sneer. She could not be bothered to waste her breath with this girl's nonsense..

"Honorable Father, whether the Fourth younger sister is present or not. Why should we believe the words of a servant girl? This is what is called don't believe what people tell you until you see it for yourself. If we go in and have a look, then wouldn't the whole truth be revealed?" While speaking Su Wan pushed open Su Luo's bedroom door.

At this time, Lu Luo lifted her eyes. She had a having been wronged expression, crying with a tone of complaining. "The Third Miss, it is reasonable to say that this servant can not say anything against you. However this servant is still so bold as to ask this sentence on behalf of the fourth Miss. The Third Miss, do you harbor any ill intentions?"

"What did you a loathsome servant girl say? Dare so far as to say this to a master of the house. Don't want to live right?" Su Wan thought this was inconceivable,—the always cowering Lu Luo dared to oppose her in front of her face as if she was striking the drums and calling for a challenge. .

"The third Miss, just a while ago, you broke and entered, destroying the door to this courtyard. Now you also brought Lord Su here full of rage. What is your plan? What kind of offense did the Fourth Miss commit against you that you would treat her like this?" Lu Luo's red rimmed eyes had tear drops rolling out.

**“You, a mere servant girl dares to speak such nonsense!” With victory in her grasp, she was being delayed by this servant girl’s excuses. Su Wan’s eyes were like sharp swords that pierced toward Lu Luo. She made a firm decision once she had taken care of Su Luo afterwards she would definitely not let this servant girl live.**

**Ha ha, could it be that this servant girl actually thought by stalling for time Su Luo would actually come back? Dream on.**

**“The third Miss, the fourth Miss is already so pitiful. Why would you maliciously slander her? How would such unwanted slander benefit you? Please let go of the fourth Miss, alright?” Lu Luo raised her eyes full of tears but firmly and determinedly stared at Su Wan.**

**“As expected. The servant girl taught by the fourth younger sister is also rude, vulgar and unreasonable.” If it was in the past, Su Wan naturally would order people to beat Lu Luo to death with a wooden stick. However because Su Zian was present she could not reveal her wicked nature.**

**Therefore she only sneered. “Saying this lady maliciously slandered her master? Ha, ha, Lu Luo servant girl. If your Miss really is inside than this lady will kowtow to her and pour her some tea as apology!”**

**Barely finished speaking, her hand already touched the door to the inner bedroom.**

**The door was heavily pushed open.**

**Su Wan with her face full of confidence entered behind Su Zian. Her face was brimming with a victorious smiling expression. Because after today’s event, the Great General’s Manor Su Luo would already have ceased to exist here. This person would become history.**

**However when she clearly saw the situation within the room, the glorious smiling expression on Su Wan’s mouth immediately froze. It was so stiff that she almost pulled a muscle.**

**She look as if seeing a ghost at Su Luo who sat at the desk with an upright posture, her hands holding a brush conscientiously writing. She heard a exploding sound in her mind and then it became blank.**

**Really saw a ghost!**

**How could this be possible!**

**Su Luo her, how could she be here!**

**Furthermore like Lu Luo said, she sat upright in front of her desk, brush by brush earnestly correctly copying the sacred scriptures. A huge pile of paper was placed by the side of her desk, those fine and neat words at a glance could tell took a lot of effort.**

**Clearly, clearly a quarter of an hour before Su Luo was not here....**

**Su Wan immediately became dumbfounded. She felt that she was as stupid as a pig. She was also the stupidest and most foolish of all pigs....**

## Chapter 156 – Secrets revealed (8)

---

Su Luo lifted her eyes up and looked at them. She then put down her brush and got up.

Su Zian's complexion in a split second became unsightly. His cold gaze swept past Su Wan in a quick glance. He turned his head toward Su Luo, frowned, and then opened his mouth to speak. "These last few days, you have remained here, never leaving once?"

Su Luo's expression was composed. Without any indignation or heat she faced her father and with a rather puzzled expression said. "Daddy, wasn't it you who commanded that this daughter was forbidden to go out? How could this daughter go anywhere?"

Such a simple sentence, but it caused Su Zian to choke until his complexion changed.

This daughter's words were ordinary, but why did they feel as sharp as a sword? Moreover, the sentence struck at the most crucial points, cutting people off until they had nothing left to say?

Su Zian felt somewhat awkward.

Right now, Su Wan had landed in a quandary.

Privately in Su Wan's heart, she had believed Liu Ruohua because Liu Ruohua had no reason to deceive her. Furthermore, Liu Ruohua previously had not known that Su Luo had escaped from her forced confinement. Therefore, Liu Ruohua's words had a certain amount of authenticity.

However, in actuality, Su Wan had no choice but to suspect that the reason she couldn't find Su Luo in her courtyard before was because Su Luo and Liu Ruohua had arranged to set her up. They had made her jump into a trap.

Currently, Su Wan's expression fluctuated indeterminately. It was suddenly bright then dark for a while, it was as if she was unable to make a firm resolution on her feelings.

Su Zian originally had thought that this daughter would say something and save him from embarrassment. However, he had never thought that Su Wan would be so useless. He lightly coughed and deliberately frowned. While staring at Su Luo, he said, "You truly have never left this place?"

"These past days, daughter has continuously copied the sacred scriptures. I have spent countless hours meticulously copying every page. Granted, even if I could go out, this daughter wouldn't have the time to." Su Luo said this very innocently, her dark pair of eyes were like limpid, watery mist. She looked at her cheap old man with an expression of having been wronged.

Sure enough, Su Zian was again deceived by such behavior. His expression eased and he asked another question. "What about that Jade Lake's Fairy? You really have never offended her?"

Su Luo feigned innocence and asked, "The Jade Lake's Fairy? Did she come to the capital? Such a pity. All along, this daughter had been locked up in her courtyard, couldn't even take a single step outside. Otherwise, I could have secretly run over catch a glimpse of her. I heard that the Jade Lake's Fairy is very beautiful!"

"Cough, cough, cough." Su Zian felt that his face had started to turn red.

Su Luo obviously had never even seen the Jade Lake's Fairy, how could she offend someone she had never seen? Besides, the Jade Lake's Fairy was at Sinking Sunset Peak which was hundreds and thousands of kilometers away from here. How could Su Luo in such a short time have run over to see the Jade Lake's Fairy and then even offend her?

Simply absurd!

That huge pile of sacred scriptures, without a month of two of labor, how could it have been transcribed? Look at this girl, she had even lost some weight.

His thinking had been too muddled. He had actually one-sidedly believed only Su Wan's words and in a rage had run over to interrogate Su Luo.

Once he recalled this, Su Zian felt an unprecedented shame towards Su Luo. In contrast, he felt an unprecedented disgust in regards to Su Wan. This Su Wan, recently she had become more and more outrageous. It seemed that letting her out of her courtyard had been the wrong decision.

“That being so...” Su Zian just wanted to let this spectacle pass and pretend as if it had never happened.

However, how could Su Wan let Su Luo go. “Father, where there’s smoke, there’s fire! This daughter is telling the truth. This news was not relayed to this daughter by a stranger, but by Prime Minister Liu’s family’s third Miss Liu Ruohua. From her own mouth, this daughter heard that Liu Ruohua came across fourth younger sister at the Sunset Mountain Range!”

## Chapter 157 – Secrets revealed (9)

---

After much deliberation, Su Wan eventually decided to trust Liu Ruohua. She firmly believed that Su Luo was just lucky. She must have come back during the short time when Su Wan went looking for Su Zian. Then she pretended that she had been in the room copying the sacred sculptures.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose with ice-cold murderous intent.

Liu Ruohua, apparently you had not died? Once you returned to the capital you actually dared to gossip? It seems that last time I didn't kill you really let you off cheaply.

Right now Su Zian's trust already started to lean towards Su Luo. He glared at Su Wan and furiously with a cold, severe tone said. "Preposterous! Other people may not know, but how could you not know about your little sister's broken body? Yet this is the type of lie you dare to even speak; it seems like the servant girl's words were right. You deliberately directed this against your little fourth sister."

Su Luo appeared as if having been wronged, both eyes were hazed over with a watery mist, seemingly lovely and pitiful. "Third older sister, why are you acting this way against me? This way, how would it benefit you? If you were to say I had offended the Jade Lake's Fairy. Then, then go invite the Jade Lake's Fairy over. You could then ask her, if I Su Luo did anything to offend her. No, you should actually ask the Jade Lake's Fairy if she has ever even seen me, Su Luo."

Su Luo's open and candid appearance faced her opposition.

That is because Su Luo understands, based on Su Wan's status, how could she be capable of inviting the Jade Lake's Fairy to come?

Su Wan was so furious that her eyes almost rolled out. "Is the Jade Lake's

Fairy someone you want to see can see?! Who knows where she is right now?!"

Su Luo with a deadpan tone smoothly added. "Since the Jade Lake's Fairy is not someone that we are able to see, first not mentioning me being locked in, even considering just my status and aptitude, where could I have seen her? And how could I have offended her?"

"You——" Su Wan was trapped by her own words and was interrogated by Su Luo until even a hundred mouths would not be able to dispute what had been said.

Yes, since the Jade Lake's Fairy was not someone who could merely be seen on a whim, then based on Su Luo's qualifications and status, how could she even see the Jade Lake's Fairy. And then how could she have offended her? Su Zian's mind was increasingly at ease and believed that Su Luo was innocent. He also felt that Su Wan was causing trouble without reason.

Fortunately Su Wan's mind was not stupid. She rapidly recalled what Liu Ruohua said. In the end at this time she would not needlessly conceal anything. She coldly smiled. "Naturally you would not see her, but with His Highness Prince Jin present then naturally you would have seen the Jade Lake's Fairy!"

"How did this even get linked with His Highness Prince Jin?" Su Zian's brows knotted.

First it was the Jade Lake's Fairy; now it was His Highness Prince Jin. These people were all huge Buddha-like figures and his tiny little general's manor simply could not afford to offend any of them.

"Daddy you ask her. You ask her if she went to the Sunset Mountain Range with His Highness Prince Jin? Humph, Su Luo don't even think about denying, Liu Ruohua actually saw everything."

Su Zian's expression fluctuated, and he bewilderedly looked at Su Luo. Even if it was hard to believe, however.... if it was real...

The corner of Su Luo's mouth lifted into a faint smile. her eyes were as clear and peaceful as the wind. " His Highness Prince Jin? Ha, ha, third elder sister,

**honorable father. What kind of person is His Highness Prince Jin? He is an immortal being from the ninth layer of heavens, incomparably noble. One glance of him from the common people makes them feel as if they had committed blasphemy. Do you guys really think that he would fancy me a good-for-nothing idiot?"**

**Even though what Su Luo said were the facts, however Su Wan still firmly refuted. "Probably...probably because His Highness Prince Jin suddenly was in a good mood?"**

**"Okay, His Highness Prince Jin was in a good mood, let's assume that was the case. In that case, may I ask how could I have made a trip from here to Sunset Mountain Range and back in a period of only one month?"**

## Chapter 158 – Secrets revealed (10)

---

“This...” Now, even Su Wan had difficulty justifying her words. After a long while, she finally thought of something to say. “His Highness Prince Jin has a Dragon Scaled Horse. A Dragon Scaled Horse can travel five hundred kilometers in a day. To make a round trip within ten days would be a cinch.”

“Since third older sister mentioned the Dragon Scaled Horse——” Su Luo coldly smiled, her eyes unblinkingly stared at Su Zian. “Then honorable father, you have also heard of the Dragon Scaled Horse. Do you think such a magical beast as the Dragon Scaled Horse, besides His Highness Prince Jin, would allow others to ride in it? I heard that the crown prince had tried to ride in the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage before and was thrown out. He almost suffered a serious mishap. Do you feel that your own daughter would have the ability to ride in the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage? Is my station more respectable than the crown prince’s? Is my martial arts higher than the crown prince’s? Or is it something else?”

Su Luo’s words were reasonable and woven seamlessly together, making them impossible to refute. Not a single strand of fault could be found.

Unless the Jade Lake’s Fairy appeared in front of her to expose her lies, otherwise, who would believe that she, Su Luo, was together with His Highness Prince Jin. And had also rode in the same Dragon Scaled Horse carriage. These things were unthinkable and nobody dared to even imagine it.

Even the crown prince and the Jade Lake’s Fairy weren’t able to touch the Dragon Scaled Horse carriage. How would it let Su Luo ride in it?

Since the conjecture that she rode the Dragon Scaled Horse could not have happened. Then, the possibility that Su Luo went to Sunset Mountain Range would naturally be false too.

In that case, from this, it could be seen that the one who lied was Su Wan, not Su Luo.

After Su Zian contemplated this information, his eyes fiercely and strictly glared at Su Wan. He coldly left a sentence. "Go back to your courtyard and carefully reflect, save your effort of coming out all day to stir up trouble and create something from nothing!" Before he finished speaking, the Great General Su Zian tossed his sleeves, turned and resolutely left.

He completely believed Su Luo's words and deduced her to be innocent. He was also convinced that Su Wan had tried to stir up trouble.

Su Wan was so furious that her face became red. Her appearance was dark and dejected. Her slim finger pointed at Su Luo, with a twisted and sinister expression, she said. "I really don't know, and also can't imagine how you made the round trip from home to Sunset Mountain Range. However, I believe what Liu Ruohua told me!"

Finished speaking, she turned and left.

She would definitely find the evidence to prove that Su Luo's words were all lies.

However, Su Luo only lazily leaned on the door frame, both hands crossed over her chest. Her face was glowing and spirited, the corner of her mouth lifted in a cold smile that was not quite a smile. "Third older sister, you are indeed forgetful. Just like this you think you can leave?"

The Su Luo right now was already not the timid and delicate-mannered one that had faced Su Zian. The her right now seemed very careless and indifferent. Her words and actions had the manner of one who had victory within their grasp. Not arrogant, or impatient and neither strict nor slow.

Su Wan paused, she turned around and glared at Su Luo, sneeringly said: "What? Want your third older sister to stay and accompany you for dinner?"

She had already prepared to let Su Luo go this time. How could Su Luo still be dissatisfied?

"That won't be necessary. It's merely that I vaguely heard before what third older sister had said. If I, Su Luo, was here, then she would kneel and pour me

some water for tea, right?” Su Luo pretended to pick at her ears. Her pair of beautiful eyebrows rose slightly, a taunting smile with a cynical intent appeared.

Food perhaps could be eaten indiscriminately, but words could not be spoken irresponsibly. You should be responsible for the words that were spoken.

However, Su Wan merely sneered. “You heard wrong. Such a thing never happened!”

Finished speaking, she lifted her skirt and hurriedly walked away. Afraid that should she be too slow, then she would be grabbed by Su Luo and forced to kneel and pour tea for her in apology.

Su Luo saw Su Wan’s the rushing rear view, trying to escape, and her mouth lifted in a shallow grim laugh.

Su Wan, you thought that this gate was so easy to pass through? You think that I, Su Luo, would be so easy to bully?

# Chapter 159 – The final craziness (1)

---

Su Wan angrily left.

She sat in her room and frowned for half a day.

Outside her door stood her two personal maids, one was Xia Qing, the other was Dong Xue.

Both of them had their heads lowered, occasionally looking at each other in dismay. Neither dared to take a step forward to trouble the Miss. Clearly, both of them knew that whoever took the first step forward to soothe the Miss, would become cannon fodder for the third Miss's rage.

They knew Su Wan's temper better than anyone else.

Su Wan suddenly stood up, she impatiently and furiously paced around her room. She clenched her fist and discovered that no matter what, she couldn't swallow being humiliated in such a way.

Why was she the one who always got scolded and cursed at?

Last time, Su Luo had beaten her to such extent, yet father merely said one scolding sentence that was light as a feather. Ultimately, Su Luo was only locked in her courtyard to reflect, and because of her own bad luck, Su Wan received the same punishment.

This time was also the same. Clearly, Su Luo had snubbed the family and left home. Su Luo freely and played unfettered around for about a month outside. Once Su Luo returned home, instead of being reproached, father actually blamed her instead?

Since when did Su Luo start to strive for things and be a step ahead of her?

This was absolutely impossible!

She must investigate this matter regarding Su Luo thoroughly. She must expel her from the family, or else afterwards, how could she have any status in this Manor?

With a flash of insight, Su Wan stood up and charged out, full of rage.

At this moment, the servant La Mei came in, carrying a hot bowl of lotus seed soup. She had originally thought to use it to ease Su Wan's temper. However, by chance, when she entered, Su Wan had rushed outside without any warning. Both people coincidentally collided together.

"Ahh——" Su Wan was scalded by the soup and started to shriek. She harshly slapped La Mei in the face, making the servant spin around.

"Even such a slut like you dares to bully me! I'm going to die from anger!" Su Wan, panting with rage, kicked her. Afterwards, without any hesitation, she turned around and left.

In front of these servants, Su Wan never bothered to cover up her spoiled, rude and unreasonable manner. Only in front of Su Zian, that delicate, kind-hearted, well-behaved and benevolent Su Wan would appear.

This time, Su Wan directly went to Prime Minister Liu's Manor to look for Liu Ruohua.

Liu Ruohua was in a very good mood today.

Because by chance, she had discovered that Su Luo had left her home in secret, and afterwards, she had ingeniously borrowed Su Wan to get rid of Su Luo. She had incited both sisters to start an internal strife, while she could watch safely from a distance and then reap the rewards when both sides became exhausted. She was extremely satisfied with herself.

Therefore, the corners of her mouth smiled radiantly non-stop, without breaking off for an entire day.

However, her expression of smiling from ear to ear on her face shocked all the servants.

This was because, when Liu Ruohua had returned to the Prime Minister's Manor, afterwards, she would rage or break things daily. The only thing she

never did was to smile.

Only when Liu Ruohua saw Su Wan did her fine, long eyebrows rise slightly.

What kind of expression was on Su Wan's face? Could it be that she didn't succeed?

Su Wan made the prompt decision to strike first and asked. "Did you just play me?!"

Liu Ruohua set down the half eaten pastry, her eyes staring seriously. "What's the matter? Didn't you go home to tattletale on Su Luo?"

With Su Wan's appearance of panting with rage, Liu Ruohua's heart had a slightly bad premonition.

Sure enough, Su Wan angrily sat down. She lifted up the teacup and took a drink of green tea. She swallowed it in one mouthful and heavily slammed it onto the table. She dropped her entire body onto a purple lounge, with her head lifted to the sky.

Her gaze blazingly stared at Liu Ruohua, with a tone as frosty as ice, she asked. "You better tell me the truth, did Su Luo really go to Sunset Mountain Range?"

"How could I lie to you about this? It's absolutely true!" Without even having to think, Liu Ruohua decisively and firmly stated.

"Swear it on your life!" Su Wan's eyes were serious and cautious, unblinkingly staring at Liu Ruohua. She gave off an imposing and forceful manner.

## Chapter 160 – The final craziness (2)

---

“Okay then, I swear on my life! At the Sunset Mountain Range, I, Liu Ruohua, indeed really did see Su Luo together with His Highness Prince Jin. This is absolutely true, if there is a thread of falsehood, I shall suffer Heaven’s thunderous mandates and be split by lightning!” Liu Ruohua’s expression was steadfast, her right hand was raised as she made the vow. Her eyes were full of sincerity.

Su Wan had originally believed in Liu Ruohua, now, she was completely convinced. Her expression started to ease up and she let out a heavy sigh. “However, Sunset Mountain Range is separated by thousands of mountains and many lakes from here. How did Su Luo come back within such a short period?”

“What! Su Luo really came back?” Liu Ruohua’s pair of eyes widened in disbelief.

“Yes, just now when I went to find her, she was there!” Su Wan didn’t want to mention the awkward situation she had landed herself in today because of this. She didn’t want to be ridiculed again.

“She really came back...” Liu Ruohua exclaimed in admiration, in a kind of ‘as expected’ manner.

Sure enough, her premonition was not wrong. At that time when they were chasing after Su Luo trying to kill her, they didn’t succeed. Then the time after that, she was also unlikely to be so easily killed off.

At the Sunset Mountain Range, the last time she saw Su Luo was when her team was chasing after her to kill her.

At that time, because of the sudden appearance of the Divine Dragon that had started to chase after them to kill them, they had to disperse and run

away in all directions.

And afterwards, it was the Jade Lake Fairy's personal maidservant who found her. They wanted her to lead them to where they could find Su Luo.

Even though that maid did not say anything, through a woman's intuition, Liu Ruohua clearly felt her murderous intent towards Su Luo.

It was also because of this that she led the others to find Su Luo without any objections.

She originally thought that Su Luo would be killed by those people. Now, it appeared that Su Luo's ability to live was truly strong. She even came back with all the hairs on her tail in place .

Su Wan frowned. "Give it some thought, how did Su Luo so quickly make this round trip?"

"Was it because of His Highness Prince Jin's Dragon Scaled Horse?" Liu Ruohua somewhat disbelievingly speculated.

"Absolutely impossible!" Su Wan rejected it completely. "It is said that the Dragon Scaled Horse wouldn't even recognize the Jade Lake's Fairy. How could it possibly acknowledge Su Luo? You should know, she doesn't even have the strength of a first ranked martial artist. She is just a good-for-nothing!"

Liu Ruohua's mouth formed a mocking smile.

"You guys were all deceived by Su Luo. Whether she really is a good-for-nothing with zero innate talent or not, I don't know. However, Su Luo's fighting skills were fast, nimble and agile, absolutely not to be trifled with. At that time, Su Luo even dodged Liu Weiming's assassin skills. Do you feel that she really is a good-for-nothing?" After some thought, Liu Ruohua finally told Su Wan the secrets she had uncovered.

"What did you just say?! Su Luo was able to dodge Liu Weiming when he attacked with his assassin skills?" Liu Weiming at that time, had the strength level of a third or fourth ranked martial artist. Even when he used all his strength, Su Luo was still able to avoid it?

This, how could this be possible...

**Only, supposing this conjecture held water...**

**Suddenly, Su Wan recalled that day at the lotus pond when she was mysteriously kicked!**

**That day, that kick had sent her into the water, and even brought Su Xi in too. Finally, there was also a fire that drew the crown prince and a group of people over....**

**This was clearly man-made!**

**Things that were closely linked and joined seamlessly together, this was definitely man-made. Otherwise, no matter how coincidental it seemed, it still could not have occurred together in so timely a manner.**

**Could it be...All this was planned and executed by Su Luo?**

**If Su Luo really was hiding her strength, then it was possible that she had really done it!**

**It couldn't be avoided that with this sentence, Miss Su Wan actually came upon the truth. That crisp, efficient Buddha Mountain Shadowless Kick was sent by Su Luo, moreover, she didn't do it just once.**

## Chapter 161-The final craziness (3)

---

The more Su Wan thought, the more enraged her heart became, more and more hateful of Su Luo. She was so furious that she gritted her teeth, almost ready to remove Su Luo's skin, peel off her tendons and hack her into tiny little pieces.

“What should we do now? Don't tell me that we should look on helplessly as Su Luo lives on and grows comfortably? Should we be bullied like this and forced to choke back our suffering?” Su Wan especially could not accept it.

If she had to watch Su Luo live well, then she might as well be told to go and die.

Liu Ruohua wrinkled her brows, pondering deeply for a long time. Suddenly, a light flashed in her brain, the sound of the slapping of her hand echoed. “I got it!”

“What?” Su Wan leaned in with a single-minded, expectant expression.

Liu Ruohua's eyes were filled with a fierce and malicious light. “This idea, even though it could inflict serious damage to Su Luo, however, it's evil and harmful. I'm afraid you wouldn't dare to do it.”

Su Wan coldly smiled and said. “So what if it is evil and harmful? What things did Su Luo do which were not also evil and harmful? Speak!”

“Okay then, lend me your ear.” Liu Ruohua whispered into Su Wan's ear some words.

“This...isn't it too big...” A hesitant expression appeared on Su Wan's face, as if she was wavering.

“So soft-hearted! If you don't dare to do this, then don't even think of getting revenge on your enemy!” Liu Ruohua repeatedly sneered, she even employed

words to incite her.

Apparently inciting her was a very useful method against Su Wan.

After hearing these words, Su Wan's expression became serious. Suddenly, she solemnly nodded her head. "Okay! I will do it according to what you've said!"

Su Luo, you heartlessly dealt me such injustice. Since you treated me this way, don't blame me for being so vicious and merciless!

Poor Su Luo who was completely unaware that she was being targeted by these two women.

Speaking of Su Luo's courtyard.

After seeing Su Wan grandiosely left with a bunch of people, only at this moment did Lu Luo genuinely released the breath she was holding.

She pulled at Su Luo's sleeves with excitement and some bitterness, pitifully entreating her. "Miss! This time it was too thrillingly close. Your arrival was very timely, otherwise the consequences would be unthinkable! From now on, it's better that you don't go out, okay? Even now, your servant's heart is jumping around like mad making thumping sounds."

Su Luo knocked on her forehead to stop her trembling and unhurriedly smiled. "Only you are so timid."

"Miss..." Su Luo started to walk towards the outside, Lu Luo pitifully followed behind at her heels. She pitifully pleaded with Su Luo.

"Be at ease, your Miss, for the time being, will not go out." Su Luo voluntarily sat on a recliner and contentedly squinted her eyes to sunbathe.

Right now she wouldn't go out, this means that afterwards.... Lu Luo wrinkled her small face which had a helpless expression on it. However, she had no means to keep the Miss at home.

Since awakening from the coma that time, it seemed as if the Miss had become another person. She had become more lively and open-minded, full of self-confidence. Furthermore, she had become more decisive with her own ideas.

**Only this was good, in the past, they were always bullied by others. Now they had the ability to bully right back!**

**Su Luo narrowed her eyes, concentrating on and recalling repeatedly that cold arrow launched towards her on that day.**

**Was it you? The Jade Lake's Fairy?**

**Su Luo's lips arched into a sneer, a complex light appeared in her eyes. These were proof that she was excited, the elation of having found a target.**

**Repeatedly chasing after to kill her, this hatred, Su Luo would never forget for a lifetime!**

**If there appeared an auspicious time, she would inevitably return it a hundred fold.**

**Su Luo closed her eyes, her spirit had already gone into her space.**

**Recently, Su Luo found that her space had another fantastic property. This discovery simply made her wild with joy.**

**Before when she was sleeping, her spirit would automatically enter her space to practice martial arts. She attempted to practice the volume of the great 《Dimensional Imprint》 that the Venerable divine dragon had tossed to her. Even though it had only been seven short days, the results however, were very pleasing.**

## Chapter 162 – The final craziness (4)

---

A gift from the Venerable divine dragon was naturally not an ordinary item. Although it was a very short volume, moreover, it was only the beginner's introduction part. However, this volume of the great 《Dimensional Imprint》 had astonishing might, the results were remarkable.

The great Dimensional Imprint, as the name implied, was divided into three stages: Width, Virtual and Space.

Width, referred to the imprint getting larger and larger, until it became limitless.

Virtual, referred to a virtual shadow. After the second stage boundary, the imprint would become a virtual shadow, a formless way to injure people.

Space, referred to the gravity in a certain space. Once the third boundary had been reached, the imprint of the virtual shadow would change into an area where the space had gravity. In this area of space, she was the master!

And right now Su Luo...

Within her space, Su Luo watched her own successfully condensed imprint in her palms. Three black lines formed on her forehead and she was rendered speechless.

Because that so-called imprint was only the size of a tadpole.

Yes, that's right, it really was only the size of a tadpole...

However, compared to a few days ago, this was already considered pretty good. Now she had already condensed out something, a few days ago, she couldn't even see a shadow of an imprint.

Furthermore, this method of cultivation was effortless. At any time or anywhere, and even when sleeping, her spirit could enter her space to

practice. Therefore, compared to other people, in terms of time and place, she would have the absolute advantage.

It was also because her innate talent and mental power were both super strong. Thus when she started to cultivate, she had to put in half the effort to get twice the result.

What Su Luo did not know was that the great Dimensional Imprint's most difficult part was to enter the door of this cultivation.

An outstanding aptitude like Su Luo's actually entered the threshold of this cultivation in less than seven days. She was able to condense an imprint in the palm of her hand, although small, it had still actually appeared.

A slow-witted person's aptitude, even if granted seven months or seven years, they still wouldn't be able to condense out an imprint the size of a melon seed.

Deep, dark night.

Not a sound could be heard all around.

The night sky appeared to be covered by a thin, cotton-like layer of dust. In the middle of the lonely sky hanged a few remnant stars. The clear and cold moonlight was bleak, devoid of any brightness.

Su Luo laid on the bed sleeping soundly. However, her spirit had already entered her space to practice the great Dimensional Imprint.

Since that day when she was able to condense out the tiny tadpole-sized dimensional imprint, afterwards, Su Luo had a gut feeling. She felt as if she had already set foot onto the first rank of a martial artist. Moreover, her distance to the second rank didn't seem all that far away.

This discovery immediately made her ecstatic.

These few days, what she did the most was to lie on her bed and sleep.

Lu Luo had the mistaken impression that her own Miss was tired out from going out this time. Therefore she was sleeping a lot to recuperate her body.

How could she ever even imagine that there was a fortunate person who could self-cultivate in their sleep.

**She was perfectly content with Su Luo obediently staying in the courtyard and not attempting to go out. As a result, she did not bother to urge her to get up, making Su Luo happy, relaxed and at ease.**

**This evening, Su Luo, just like before, had already finished washing her face, rinsing her mouth and climbed onto her bed to sleep.**

**Early in the morning, around three o'clock, the darkness before the dawn.**

**This short period of time was very special, it was the darkest time of the day. It was also the time when tired people's sleep was the deepest. It was usually the most difficult time to wake people up with noise.**

**In the darkness of the night, a strong and energetic figure, quick as a ravenous wolf, quietly approached Su Luo's courtyard.**

**He stood at the entrance of the courtyard, speechlessly curling his lips.**

**There was such a broken down house in the great General Su's Manor?**

**The wall was worn-out and broken as if a gentle blow from the wind would collapse it. The most marvelous thing was that there was no door. He didn't even need to climb over the wall, he could just directly enter.**

**Was this really the fourth Miss Su's home?**

**A touch of puzzlement flashed across the eyes of the black-clothed person. However what does it have to do with me? As long as he finished this task, he would pick up one thousand pieces of gold coins.**

## Chapter 163 – The final craziness (5)

---

He quietly found his way into the inner courtyard. He accurately walked towards the room where Su Luo was sleeping.

If nobody had secretly told him, how could he in a short time distinguish which room was Su Luo's?

Who was he?

Coming over in the dead of the night, what did he want to do?

Inside of the room, Su Luo, who was in deep slumber, suddenly opened her eyes. In the dark, a pair of beautiful eyes glistened brightly, with ruthless rays of light.

In her previous life, Su Luo was a top gold medal assassin. Having resided in the dark underworld for a long time, she had an instinct for danger residing in her body and vigilance.

Even though the martial arts of the black-clothed person at the door was a lot higher than hers, however, she was still awakened by her instincts. .

The black-clothed person was probably warned by someone, therefore his actions were unusually cautious. He did not take Su Luo to be someone without a bit of martial arts, a good-for-nothing.

One could only see him wordlessly poke a hole in the paper part of the window and very carefully, blow sleeping gas into the bedroom.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth lifted into a cruel and bloodthirsty sneer.

Sleeping gas! Unexpectedly, he had used sleeping gas worth a hundred gold coins against her. They really thought she was worth it.

Sleeping gas could only be refined by Apothecaries. People who inhaled the gas would go limp from head to toe. In addition, the sleeping gas was

composed of a strong hallucinogen and an aphrodisiac. After breathing it in, the body would be seeped in an extremely fierce desire. To get rid of this drug, the affected person must have sex.

Su Luo faintly smiled, she slowly, little by little, approached that small pipe

Fixated on that small tube, Su Luo leaned close, and with all her force, blew into it.

“Cough, cough, cough——”

How could the black-clothed person ever imagine that inside the room, Su Luo would be awake, moreover, she would blow the sleeping gas in the small pipe back towards him? Temporarily, he didn't discover it and inhaled a mouthful, immediately choked and started to cough violently.

Fortunately, when he entered, he had already knocked Lu Luo out. Therefore, the servant girl was not awakened by the coughing sound. So she couldn't shriek loudly and raised an alarm.

Taking advantage that he didn't take her life! This opportunity only knocked once!

Su Luo also did not open the door. She took out a small incense-length pipe from her space. She quickly used this small pipe to poke through the paper part of the window and suddenly blew towards the black-clothed man.

The black-clothed person's sleeping gas was refined by a mere Elementary Apothecary. However, Su Luo's sleeping gas was something she roped Apothecary Leng into personally refining for her. It was colorless, odorless and the effect was wonderfully strong!

Su Luo used her martial arts to inhale, aimed at the small pipe, and blew three mouthfuls of air in a row!

“Cough, cough, cough....cough, cough, cough....” The black-clothed man was choked by the sudden rise of smoke that covered his mouth and nose. He repeatedly coughed, as if he was about to cough his lungs out.

Su Luo sinisterly and coldly smiled. Only at this time did she open the door. She kicked her foot out and sent the black-clothed man to the ground.

**Su Luo crouched down and nimbly pulled off the black-clothed man's face mask.**

**Right now his complexion was flushed, both eyes were red, and in its darkness hid a strange radiance.**

**It was quite obvious that he was infected by the sleeping gas and its poisonous effects.**

**This face was unfamiliar, and also very average. Such an average look among a crowd of people would be hard to pick out. It was indeed a face perfectly suited for a hitman.**

**Unfortunately, if it was the Su Luo before, perhaps he had a chance to win. However, the current Su Luo was almost at the second rank, plus all of her previous life's fighting skills. The black-clothed man in front of her would only be suppressed.**

**Su Luo's expression was deep and frightening. It emitted a threatening and deadly aura.**

**She smiled sinisterly: "Speak, who sent you here?"**

**Coming to her room in the dead of the night, what were they trying to do?**

**The black-clothed man's face was malevolent. His entire body emitted a green light. His palm struck towards Su Luo.**

## Chapter 164 – The final craziness (6)

---

His body was currently affected by the sleeping gas, but the black-clothed man still had not lost all rational thought. Some of his martial arts skills still remained.

He was a grand third-ranked martial artist. In his organization, the black-clothed man was also ranked near the top. Otherwise, he wouldn't have dared to take on this task.

No matter how outsiders regarded her, Su Luo had always been the Su family's fourth Miss. She still represented the Great General Su's Manor.

This palm strike contained all the black-clothed man's formidable power, he had used all his remaining strength.

The black-clothed man had originally thought that even if this palm strike couldn't kill the opponent, it would still inflict serious damage.

However, the reality stunned him.

He could only look on as Su Luo moved to the side to avoid his strike. At the same time, the hollow of her palm suddenly had a tiny black dot. This black dot was very strange. It seemed to glitter with a tiny halo. It carried a trace of virtual shadow as it smashed ruthlessly on the head of the black-clothed man!

Who would have thought that such a tiny black dot would be so hard. Only the crisp sound of the strike was heard, then the black-clothed man's eyes immediately shrank to mosquito size. He swayed, feeling somewhat dizzy and confused.

When Su Luo saw this, her heart became overjoyed.

She had never thought that such a tiny black dot would be so miraculous. Seeing the effects, this small dot's actual might was not small at all.

Also, it came and went without a trace. It could appear and disappear

unexpectedly and change rapidly. It was simply impossible for the enemy to guard against.

She had taken out the tiny black dot to put it through a practice run to test it out. Now, she was really satisfied with the result of the test.

Su Luo with a delighted disposition observed the black-clothed man. In her hand, she held a handful of red pills. She counted each one in front of his face. “I don’t want to kill you, but I do want you to swallow something. Look here, this is a heartbreak pill, this pill disperses five poisons, this is a hold back the heart pill, this is...”

These bright red medicinal pills were all violent and slow poisons. All the pills had been made especially for Su Luo by Apothecary Leng grudgingly after she had pestered him non-stop.

Each time Su Luo said a name, the black-clothed man’s body would shiver once.

As a hitman, he was not afraid of death nor pain. However, he was afraid of being tortured to the point that he wanted to die but still could not. These medicinal pills were all toxic but not fatal. There were no antidotes to these pills. Moreover, the poison would strike intermittently, bringing random bouts of continuous pain.

He was simply very baffled. Every single one of these pills were priceless. How could the fourth Miss Su in this run-down courtyard have them? If she sold only one, it would be sufficient to buy a manor bigger than the Su Manor.

Therefore, this situation was very hard for him to comprehend.

Su Luo looked at him. The corner of her mouth lifted into a sneer that was cold and extremely dangerous. “You can choose not to tell. However, the consequences of this choice, I hope you will be able to bear it.”

She had specifically asked for these poisons from Apothecary Leng. The purpose of the poisons was for when she met with a situation like today where they could be used to extort a confession. Therefore, each poisonous pill had been carefully selected by Su Luo.

She believed that medicinal pills was useless against someone of Nangong

Liuyun's level of expertise, someone that had firm willpower. However, regarding the overwhelming majority of people, a hundred tries would result in a hundred percent success.

Sure enough, the black-clothed man's sinister appearance glared at Su Luo with alarm. He stated one word at a time. "You must guarantee that after I finish speaking, you will absolutely not force me to swallow any of those poisons!"

The corner of Su Luo's mouth shifted into a sneer.

Apparently, the person behind the scenes was just so-so. The so-called expert he or she had invited over was only a common martial artist. Moreover, the integrity of the hitman was very weak.

According to principle, hitmen had harsh occupational ethics. Even if they died, they absolutely could not reveal any of their client's information. This was the standard practice and an unbreakable rule in the world of the hitman.

"You said it before, these poisons are all very expensive. Do you feel that this lady is a wasteful type of person? Speak! In the end, who hired you?" Su Luo had both arms crossed in front of her chest and lazily casted sidelong glances at him while speaking.

## Chapter 165 – The final craziness (7)

---

She had a languid expression, like a cat bathing in the sun, and also like a king that had everything under control

The black-clothed man bit his lower lip, hesitating for awhile before finally gritting his teeth and said: “It is your family’s third Miss. This task was issued by her!”

The third Miss? Su Wan?

Sure enough, it was that person as expected.

In fact, Su Luo’s first guess was her but she lacked strong evidence as proof.

A smiling expression slowly emerged on Su Luo’s face. It was an ice-cold and dangerously threatening smile. “The third older sister? How could it be her? You are simply saying nonsense!”

When the black-clothed man heard what was said, he became somewhat anxious. “I have proof!” Saying this, he took out a piece of paper from the Mercenary Union from his clothing. Trembling, he handed it over to Su Luo. “You see, this is your family’s third Miss’s own handwriting for the contract of this task and her signature. If you don’t believe it, go ahead and carefully look at it!”

Su Luo used the weak moonlight to sweep a glance at it. Indeed, the handwriting on the contract was Su Wan’s.

It really was her!

“So what did she invite you over to do? Kill me?” Su Luo calmly slipped that piece of paper into her own bosom. She watched the continuously trembling black-clothed man with a smile that was not quite a smile.

“No, not that....” The black-clothed man somewhat timidly turned his face

away.

“Speak the truth, or...” Su Luo took out a red heartbreak pill and waved it in front of his face. That action naturally had a threatening overtone.

A touch of panic flashed across the black-clothed man’s eyes, he stammeringly said. “It is to kill you. However, first, I must rape you before killing you....and also...”

“And also what?” Su Luo’s expression remained unchanged but her eyes had a matchless ice-cold light.

“And also...take your corpse and leave it out in the wilderness for wolf-dogs to gnaw on...” The black-clothed man really didn’t want to say it, but under Su Luo’s menacing and imposing manner, he didn’t dare to hide the truth. He confessed to everything he knew without leaving anything out.

First rape, then kill, and then leave the corpse in the wilderness for wolf-dogs to gnaw on? Su Wan, ah, Su Wan. Originally I thought your heart was a little malicious, but didn’t expect you to have the heart of a snake and the sting of a scorpion!

Which time was it not you who first struck at me while I, Su Luo, only passively counterattacked? In all respects, I exercised forbearance. But on the contrary, I gave you an inch and you wanted a mile. Could it be that you really think I’m that easy to bully?

You were even able to use such a sinister move.

Good, very good, excellent!

If I don’t uproot you this time, then how could I, Su Luo, have peaceful days in this manor from now on?

I’ve only heard of a thousand nights of being a thief, but never heard of every night guarding against a thief.

Since you are so heartless, then don’t blame me for being unjust.

Su Luo’s eyes were full of ice-cold, bone-chilling murderous intent.

This was the first time, she had the urge to kill someone.

**“You...” The black-clothed man saw Su Luo’s expression suddenly change. Immediately, he had a bad kind of premonition.**

**This was a killer’s innate kind of intuition, a type of normally terrible intuition.**

**Sure enough, he only saw Su Luo’s hand chop down towards him like a knife. In a flash, it knocked the black-clothed man unconscious.**

**Seeing the black-clothed man softly fall to the ground, the corner of Su Luo’s mouth lifted into a cold, bloodthirsty sneer.**

**First rape, then kill and expose the corpse to the wilderness, right? Su Wan, since these were the rules you drew up for this game, then let us play according to the rules of your game.**

**But before we start, allow me, your younger sister, to first send you a major gift.**

**The moon hanged on the tip of a willow branch, the night was as cold as water.**

**This was a moonless night with high winds, perfectly suited to commit murder.**

**Su Luo changed into all black clothing, suitable for nocturnal use. She carried the black-clothed man and jumped over the wall.**

**Her delicate and nimble body rushed with great speed in the vast dim night.**

**Su Manor’s security was regarded as tight, however, wherever Su Luo went, not a single guard sensed her existence.**

**Previously, having gone through the process of stealing the Celestial Spirit water, Su Luo became extremely familiar with the terrain of Su Manor.**

## Chapter 166 – The final craziness (8)

---

Su Luo hid in the vast dim night, quickly heading towards Su Wan's Hibiscus courtyard.

Her acute vision, allowed her to see in the night as if it was daytime.

Her keen insight and perception of danger to her body, allowed her to always be a step ahead in finding patrolling soldiers and avoiding them.

Su Luo still hadn't learned the exquisite footwork of the people here, but her ability to hide was something the people here did not possess.

Along the way, she was very cautious and prudent. Su Luo very quickly felt her way to Su Wan's Hibiscus courtyard.

Su Wan's Hibiscus courtyard, compared to Su Luo's run-down courtyard, was like night and day.

This Hibiscus courtyard was close to the main courtyard. The residence was exquisitely designed, paying close attention to luxury and refinement, giving off a gorgeous ornate appearance everywhere.

Right now, it was already the crack of dawn.

According to convention, the oil lamps should have already been snuffed out.

However, now in Su Wan's room, a lonely lamp was still lighted. The window had a reflection of Su Wan's clever, long silhouette.

Su Luo quietly approached, she cautiously and carefully poked through the paper layer of the window. Through the window screen, she looked inside.

Right now, Su Wan was reclining on a soft couch, on a mental journey exploring the heavens.

Her mood was apparently very good. The corner of her mouth would unconsciously expose a joyful smile. At the same time, she also seemed somewhat nervous and expectant.

It was unknown what she was happy about, looking forward to, and also what she was nervous about....

However, Su Luo seemed to understand her thoughts at this moment.

A sneer plastered onto Su Luo's mouth. Su Wan, ah, Su Wan. You should properly enjoy your last moment. After tonight... You will be confronted with this life's most embarrassing day. Moreover, it would never end and you could never escape from it.

Su Luo retrieved that sleeping gas pipe from her space.

She originally wanted to return a tooth for a tooth. She wanted to use the black-clothed man's sleeping gas that had been burned halfway, but after further thought, she abandoned this idea.

Because that quality really couldn't avoid detection. It had color and smell, and was very likely to be discovered by Su Wan.

Therefore, Su Luo, without the slightest hesitation, chose to use Apothecary Leng's product, the colorless, odorless, high grade sleeping gas.

Poking through the window screen, Su Luo slowly blew the sleeping gas into the room.

It couldn't be said enough, the sleeping gas's effect was extremely good.

In less than a moment, Su Wan felt that her entire body was dry and difficult to endure the heat. The area around her heart seemed to have countless ants nibbling on it. The scratching gave her an oddly incomparable itch, that was also abnormally comfortable.

This kind of wonderful, novel feeling, was something she had never encountered before.

Her complexion very quickly became scarlet, both eyes were also very red and glossy. Her vision was blurred.

She unconsciously began to peel off her clothing.

**One piece, and another piece...**

**Finally, only a thin undergarment remained.**

## Chapter 167 – The final craziness (9)

---

Su Luo saw that the time was ripe. The corner of her mouth perked up into a sinisterly cold smirk.

Su Wan, the time to enjoy yourself is finally here. Are you ready?

Su Luo did not remain hidden, she pushed open the door and directly tossed the unconscious black-clothed man towards Su Wan.

Su Wan was hit by the heavy weight. Originally, she was very annoyed. However, something fantastic happened when she came into contact with the other person's fervent skin. A hard to describe feeling of heat started to rise up from the soles of her feet.

Her body tingled, numbed, and itched but an unusually comfortable feeling also rose.

Su Wan was already somewhat delirious now. She was completely immersed in the dreamland of her own weaving. That place was a charming, gentle, and fantastic world.

She unconsciously, instinctively, and wildly tore apart the black-clothed man's outer robes.

She seemed impatient and urgent. Her movements were wild, coarse, and crude.

The black-clothed man right now could not be called the black-clothed man.

All the clothing on his body from top to bottom had been peeled off by Su Wan.

He remained unconscious as he laid on top of Su Wan's soft couch.

Su Wan instinctively climbed up on the black-clothed man's body though she

still did not know how to relieve her own body's suffering.

The black-clothed man had already inhaled some sleeping gas before and at the moment, the entire room was filled with hints of sleeping gas. He opened his eyes. They were scarlet red, as if a raging inferno had been ignited.

His reasoning had long ago abandoned him.

Su Wan was in so much pain that cold sweat kept pouring down. However, no matter what she did, she could not stop the pain.

With a taunting smile plastered across her mouth, Su Luo burningly watched this lavish, lively exercise show that was occurring in front of her.

Su family's third Miss had lost her body's purity to a black-clothed man of unknown origin. If this matter was to spread out...it was indeed something good to look forward to.

Such a good-looking action movie was being enacted on the bed. Su Luo was a very generous person, how could she enjoy it alone?

Su Luo thoughtfully gathered all the clothing they had taken off aside. The bed sheets, quilted cover, and everything that could be used to cover up the body were all without exception lit on fire by Su Luo.

Once the flame rose, the hint of sleeping gas would be swallowed up by the fire.

Star-like speckles of flame jumped up, shining upon Su Luo's face which was suddenly dark then light. At this moment, her expression was hard to see.

Because it was all flammable material, the fire rapidly began to expand.

Su Luo ultimately left just an ice-cold smile to remember her by. She locked the door, turned around, and flew over the wall.

The fire spread endlessly to the surroundings. However, the male and female on the bed whose bodies were red like fruit were as tightly intertwined together as before. They were stubbornly pursuing the most primitive joy. The action was explicit and intense, wildly coarse like a bomb setting fire to the earth.

They were both totally oblivious to the spreading fire. Nevertheless, this did not mean that other people wouldn't notice.

These two people were not the only ones in the Hibiscus courtyard. There were many servant girls and old women stationed in the courtyard to wait upon Su Wan.

Within the room, the fire was fierce and intense. From the beginning when the flames were star-like speckles to when they burst into a violent blaze afterwards, the time that had passed did not exceed the brief period required to burn a stick of incense.

A servant girl saw the lively flames in the night and immediately started to yell out loud.

“Fetch water! Fetch water! Quickly put out the fire— —” Having been scared out of her mind, the servant let out a penetrating scream that ripped through the quiet night sky. It woke up everyone that was fast asleep.

Consequently, each and every one of them, with dishevelled hair and without time to properly put on clothing, had all rushed out.

Most people in the Great General Su’s Manor practiced martial arts.

The patrolling guards had also discovered the particulars over in the courtyard. The captain led the troops and rushed over. They joined the procession of rescuers.

La Mei kept watch at Su Wan’s doorway. Towards the captain of the patrol troops, she anxiously spoke. “Captain Li, quickly go and save the third Miss. The third Miss is still locked inside!”

Su Wan’s door was locked. It may have been melted by the fire into another shape. Therefore, no matter what, La Mei was unable to open it.

## Chapter 168 – The final craziness (10)

---

“Doesn’t the third Miss know martial arts? Why is she still in there?” The fire inside wasn’t that huge, why was it that the third Miss still hadn’t come out? Captain Li felt this was incomprehensible.

“I don’t know, anyway, there’s no time to deal with such matters, hurry and go save her!” La Mei was so worried that both of her eyes were red.

If something were to happen to the third Miss and nothing had happened to the servants; the Great General would definitely use military punishment to beat them to death.

Yet, at this moment inside the bedroom, it was a tangled and rushed mess.

Because the large fire burned away traces of the toxic sleeping gas, therefore Su Wan very quickly awoke from the drug’s effect. She discovered that her entire body ached. It was so painful that she almost cried out.

She bitterly laughed secretly in her heart. She never thought that she could have such an erotic dream. Moreover, such a domineering erotic dream.

However, the subsequent rubbing movement thoroughly sobered her up.

Afterwards, she abruptly became clear-headed!

This was not a dream, but was reality. Moreover, it was still taking place!

“Ahhh——” Su Wan suddenly shrieked loudly. She immediately smashed her fist towards the black-clothed man.

The black-clothed man had temporarily lowered his guard and was pounded until his head bleed. Because of this, he also became clear-headed in an instant.

Su Wan and the black-clothed man looked at each other in dismay.

**This was not the first time they had met, so with just a glance, they recognized each other.**

**“You...”**

**“You, you, you, why is it that you are here?” Both of Su Wan’s hands covered her chest, wanting to wail loudly. She wanted to scream loudly at the sky, but discovered that apart from leaking out a line of tears, she could do nothing else.**

**The her right now had lost her head from fear, almost to the point of falling apart.**

**She, she actually....Oh heavens! Who could come and tell her, what kind of situation was this? How could it turn out like this!**

**The black-clothed man’s mind slowly recalled the scenes starting from last night.**

**He took on the task to harm Su Manor’s fourth Miss, but who would have thought that he would be captured by her. Afterwards....what happened afterwards?**

**Just when the black-clothed man was holding his head in pain trying to remember, Su Wan severely swung at him with the palm of her hand. “You idiot! Bastard! Hoodlum! I spent money for you to rape Su Luo, why did you come and find me!? I already told you I am the Su family’s third Miss, the third Miss!”**

**Su Wan was about to collapse and was on the verge of passing out.**

**The black-clothed man originally thought to retort back, but he discovered that it was best he didn’t retort back....**

**At the doorway, when everyone heard Su Wan’s sharp cries of fear, they were all terrified until their complexion went pale.**

**La Mei’s shouting and continuous banging on the door became even more urgent. “Miss! Miss! Are you alright? Quickly come out!”**

**Patrol Captain Li used his body to bang against the door unceasingly.**

**The not-so-solid door issued a sound of being rammed. Tottering on the**

verge of collapse, it was as if in the next second, it would broke apart from the ramming.

A trace of terror flashed across Su Wan's heart. She was itching to choke the black-clothed man to death, but right now...

Su Wan saw the continuously spreading fire. A thread of alarm flashed across her head and she loudly yelled. "Quickly get out. You, quickly get the f\*ck out! Run for it!"

If the people knocked down the door, came in and saw them like this, then the consequences... Just thinking about it, Su Wan became extremely dismayed.

"But..." The black-clothed man saw the scarlet fingernail scratches left on his naked body and also became anxious immediately afterwards.

"Where're the clothes!" Su Wan anxiously shouted. However, no matter how much she looked, even when she checked under the bed, she still couldn't find a single stitch of clothing.

Moreover, the matter more insulting than there being no clothes, was that she couldn't even find any embroidered bed sheets!

# Chapter 169 – Schemes within a scheme (1)

---

“Go? Where can I go?” The black-clothed man had a tense expression, he looked around in panic.

What made him feel the most despair was that any cloth in the room that could be used for cover was without exception, all set on fire. Even the tablecloth was not exempted!

Su Wan was also equally desperate. She anxiously and urgently paced back and forth in the room.

Suddenly, she saw the intact wardrobe and immediately beckoned to the black-clothed man. “Quick! Quickly hide in there!”

The black-clothed man by now had already lost his head from fear. Seeing a wardrobe where he could hide, without out having to think he went in.

At this time, more and more people surrounded the courtyard. Finally, even Su Zian was startled enough to come over with large strides and an icy expression. He saw the bustling crowd of people and commanded. “What are you guys standing around for? Where is the third Miss?!”

After Captain Li saluted to Su Zian, he hurriedly said. “The third Miss should still be inside. Just now we heard her voice.”

“Move back!” Su Zian gave a cold grunt, both hands only used thirty percent strength before a snap and cracking sounds could be heard. Afterwards, with a bang, the door that was heated scarlet red was pushed open.

Inside the room, Su Wan was so anxious that she nearly started to hop about.

She wanted to loudly shout at them to stop, telling them not to come in.

However, on second thought, the fire was becoming more and more intense. In the end, she still had to get out....

After hearing the crashing sounds of the door, Su Wan became extremely anxious. Without thinking, with a swoosh sound, she also went into the wardrobe. With a bang sound, she slammed the wardrobe's door close.

Now, Su Wan made the same mistake as before when she jumped into the lotus pond.

Whenever Su Luo did a job, she always thought through the next three or four steps. However, Su Wan could only think about the present predicament and could not imagine the second step, the third step...Consequently, this determined her doomed tragedy.

With a loud bang, the door was knocked open. Because of the violent shaking, the thick and solid beam on top of the room could not support its own weight. With a loud rumble, it collapsed...

Such a small change caused a butterfly effect.

People only heard a violent crashing sound, a fiery ball of spark radiating all around.

Finally, the thick and solid beam smashed down on top of the wardrobe. The two people within the wardrobe were pounded until they started to bitch endlessly. They were knocked around until they became dizzy and could only hear rumbling sounds in their ears.

However this was just the beginning of their tragedy.

In the beginning, Su Wan had selected this wardrobe mainly because it was somewhat far from the starting place of the fire and could not easily catch on fire. However, after being smashed by the already burning beam, the fire rapidly spread towards the wardrobe.

Yet, Su Wan and the black-clothed man hidden inside were still unaware of the danger. They still believed that they were very safe.

Su Zian did not realize the strength he used to push open the door was excessive and had brought enormous trouble to Su Wan. He was the first to step into the room, continuously fanning away the black smoke and loudly calling. "Wan'er (1)! Wan'er! Quickly come out!"

Even though recently, Su Wan had time after time disappointed Su Zian, but blood was thicker than water. In addition, Su Wan had continuously and painstakingly fawned on Su Zian to win his favor. Therefore, Su Zian still had a little father and daughter mutual affection towards her.

How could Su Zian look on unfeelingly as Su Wan met with such a mishap?

Thus, he entered the room together with Captain Li. Everyone was shouting out Su Wan's name continuously.

The intensity of the fire inside was already hard to contain.

Fire was everywhere and there was also thick smoke everywhere.

The thick smoke rolled on surrounded by flames, and the temperature was also extremely high. Standing inside was like being inside of a steamer. It was so hot that it made a person's entire body become drenched in sweat.

The black smoke made the eyes astringent and ache, exceptionally difficult to bear.

"Wan'er! Wan'er!" He continuously called out Su Wan's name. His heart became uneasy. Could it be that...Wan child had already met with a mishap?

*1) Wan'er: The direct translation for er is child or son. In this case it's used as an affectionate nickname like saying Danny instead of Dan. So from now on will just use Wan'er instead of Wan child (which I personally like since it showed more affection).*

## Chapter 170 – Schemes within a scheme (2)

---

“Third Miss! Third Miss, where are you!?” Captain Li and his subordinates were all dispersed in the room searching for her in a block pattern.

However what made them despair even more was that within this condemned room, how had Su Wan disappeared into thin air?

But they were quite certain Su Wan should be in this room. This was because at the beginning, they had heard the sounds of her screaming.

“Master, look here, this...” Captain Li pointed at the mess on top of the soft couch. His expression was heavy with incomprehensible misgivings.

Su Zian followed his gaze and looked, immediately traces of rage flashed through his eyes!

On top of that soft couch was some scarlet blood and disheveled ceasings...

It was clearly in complete shambles, at a glance, a perceptive person could obviously recognize what happened.

The muscles on Su Zian’s face twitched uncontrollably, both of his eyes had combusted into a raging inferno. His pair of hands clenched tightly into fists, the blue veins on the back of the hands throbbed with his heartbeats.

Impossible, this was definitely not possible!

His Wan’er (1) would never ruin the family’s traditions by doing such things!

Now, Su Wan was also feeling uncomfortable within the wardrobe.

In the wake of the fire getting more and more intense, the black smoke within the room had also become more dense. The air became thinner and was very scarce.

On top of that, they were shut within the wardrobe where the air was even

more pitifully thin.

She could still deal with the thin air. but the more terrifying thing was the thick smoke. It was coming in through the thin crack and the entire wardrobe was filled with smoke from the fire. It was suffocating her until she almost couldn't bear it any longer.

What made Su Wan more depressed was that the surroundings of the wardrobe had also caught fire. The fire was fierce, making the temperature suddenly soar up.

Outside of the wardrobe was a flaming fire. Inside the wardrobe, both of them were like roasted suckling pigs in an oven. They were being baked until they almost passed out.

Su Wan endured and continued to endure. At last, she could not bear it any longer and loudly started to cough.

The loud sound of fierce coughing echoed in the quietness of the indoors and broke the silence.

Without waiting for Su Zian's orders, Captain Li took his subordinates and rushed towards the sound's origin. They manually removed the beam on top and quickly opened the wardrobe.

The wardrobe was opened and they both rolled out.

"Cough, cough, cough...cough, cough, cough..." Su Wan. who was lying on the ground, could actually breathe in fresh air. She desperately breathed it in deeply, resulting in it choking part of her lungs. Her coughing became increasingly severe.

The black-clothed man was also lying on his back on the ground, gasping large breaths of air. Now his vital energy seem incredibly weak, completely different from his strong manner of an expert martial artist before.

Su Zian, including everyone present, were all dumbstruck by the scene in front of their eyes...

This strange picture had surpassed all of its predecessors and had no successors.

Captain Li, at a glance, could recognize that naked person as the third Miss, Su Wan. He was absolutely sure!

The raging fire continued to burn, on top of the soft couch....

If everything was put together, it was enough to give everyone unlimited space to imagine what occurred.

“Ahhhh—” Su Wan lifted her head, saw her father and everyone’s figures. She lost her mind from fear, subconsciously placing both hands over her bosom and shrieked loudly.

How, how could there be so many people? Furthermore, even her father was amongst the crowd?

Her body....Oh heavens!

Right now, Su Wan wished that she could immediately pass out, pretending as if nothing had happened.

If she was to do so now, it was obvious already too late.

Su Zian was so enraged that both of his eyes were about to explode. His entire body was shaking, itching to use his fist to kill this daughter. This daughter who was without a sense of honor and brought ruin to the family traditions.

*1) See chapter 169 for the footnote... Wan'er is an affectionate nickname.*

## Chapter 171 – Schemes within a scheme (3)

---

Under the light from the flames, his formerly mighty face was suddenly bright then gloomy. It was as black as the bottom of a pot. His mood was unclear and indistinguishable.

However, the people closest to him could clearly feel the approaching storm clouds reeking of blood.

It was quite obvious, the Great General Su Zian's fury was already at the peak.

Right now, Su Zian was itching to choke this living daughter Su Wan to death! He would rather have never had such a disgraceful daughter!

If this were to spread out, afterwards, where could they place Su Manor's face?

However, in the presence of so many people...Su Zian only clenched his fists tightly and his complexion was ashen.

Su Zian ultimately said nothing, only his face was dark. The temple on his forehead bulged and throbbed incessantly. Both of his eyes were hazed over with bloodlust. He swept a quick glance at the surrounding people.

People that were swept by his machine-gun like gaze, each and every one of them kept quiet out of fear. They reverently lowered their eyes, even the sound of their breathing was slowed down.

"Today's matter, if anyone dares to mention it, they will be killed without a chance of being pardoned!"

A heavy murderous intent flashed through Su Zian's eyes.

Su Manor doesn't only have Su Wan as the only unwed daughter. If today's matter were to spread outside, how could the other daughters henceforth get married? Not to mention the daughter preparing to wed the crown prince to

become the crown prince's imperial concubine, Su Xi?

"Deal with this!" Su Zian scornfully and disdainfully glared at the two weak figures on the floor in front of him.

After he finished speaking, Su Zian tossed his sleeves and left. His footsteps were firm and decisive.

Captain Li, who had stood behind the general since the beginning, looked at Su Wan crying uncontrollably on the floor with a complex expression.

The third Su family Miss was graceful, noble and incomparably beautiful. He would admire her daily numerous times.

Now that he saw this disgusting side of hers, he finally realized. It turned out she was this kind of fickle and loose woman.

He subconsciously took off the cloak from his own body and gently placed it on top of Su Wan's body.

Su Wan appeared to be grabbing at the last straw that could save her life. Her cries were mournful and intense: "I am innocent! I have been wrongly accused! It's Su Luo. It's Su Luo that slut who framed me! It is her who harmed me!"

With the light from the flames, her appearance was sinister and twisted. Her pair of eyes were scarlet red, filled with maliciousness and were very spiteful. She had a crazy expression like a mentally deranged fool. Her condition was terrifying like a lunatic.

In a short while, Captain Li's original feelings of pity dropped by more than half. He calmly said. "Third Miss rest assured, the general will use his own wise judgement."

Captain Li held Su Wan who was tightly wrapped with his cloak, with a complex expression on his face, as he left with her.

"Deal with this!" Captain Li left only these three words.

People could only see the swords in the soldier's hands swing down. Slice after slice appeared on the black-clothed person's body. Fresh blood sprayed out wildly, continuously spraying out...

Soon, his corpse was kicked into the raging fire and afterwards, was cremated

into black smoke.

As if he had never existed before.

Captain Li's troops followed behind him and also filed out.

Within a moment, everyone walked out, leaving behind a completely empty courtyard.

The same evening.

The night was pitch-black as ink.

Su Zian sat inside his study, the lamp flickered brightly, then darkened. It shined upon his hazy and fierce appearance, revealing a ruthless expression. His overcast mood was clearly indeterminable.

Madam Su came in, holding a bowl of lotus seed soup. Seeing Su Zian's unstable mood and absent-minded appearance, she sighed.

The passing years seemed to have left no traces on her face.

"General, you haven't eaten anything tonight. You should eat something at least." Madam Su's voice was gentle and sweet-sounding, very pleasant to listen to.

"Not eating, take it away." Su Zian frowned and stubbornly refused.

## Chapter 172 – Schemes within a scheme (4)

---

“Is the general’s spirit still wounded with regards to Wan’er’s matter?”  
Madam Su softly asked.

“Ah.” Su Zian let out a strong sound of agreement.

No matter what was said, that was a daughter he had seen growing up from childhood. After all, blood was thicker than water.

At that time, he was furious and in a difficult position. He had to consider the reputation of the Su family clan, thus he was itching to put Wan’er to death. However, now, after much careful reflection, there seem to be many fishy occurrences in this matter.

Madam Su was the most adept at discerning his thoughts from his body language. With one glance, she could tell what Su Zian was thinking. She followed with a sigh, her expression was disappointed and frustrated: “General, this matter was rather too odd. Can’t say for sure...maybe Wan’er was wrongfully accused...”

Madam Su knew that this was what Su Zian was thinking, so she deliberately said it this way. She made it appear as if she happened to hold the same opinion as him. Just as if their two hearts beat as one.

Sure enough, Su Zian’s pair of eyes opened wide. “You think so too?”

“Yes, the more this wife thought about it, the more I don’t understand. How could Wan’er do something like this? Normally, Wan’er is gentle, soft and dignified. She knows her etiquette and understands human interactions. Even if she was birthed by a concubine, when everyone mentions the Su family’s third Miss, they would express the sound of their approval and praise. You tell me, this kind of Wan’er, how could she do such a thing that dishonors the family traditions?”

“You mean this matter has some hidden secrets?” Su Zian’s appearance changed slightly. He indeed had some suspicions. He was suffering from a lack of evidence.

“Yes this wife feels that Wan’er’s matter....Someone secretly set this up to frame her.” Madam Su’s eyes were black as ink, so deep as to be bottomless.

Every one of her sentences was ordinary, but step by step, it controlled Su Zian’s mood. Leading him in the direction she desired.

Madam Su, for so many years, was unstoppably favored, making Su Zian trust her unconditionally. It was impossible without her having some outstanding talent. This type of imperceptible influence, like the breeze amongst the drizzling rain, was her strength.

“Framed?!” Su Zian suddenly stood up, he impatiently paced around the room. He continuously rubbed both hands, displaying his heart’s unease and worries.

“Yes, it should be a set-up.” Madam Su’s appearance was equitable with a slight frown. “See, how on earth can there be such coincidences? The black-clothed man could so coincidentally enter Wan’er’s courtyard? Once the fire started, why was it that both of them did not discover it? The fire burned their clothing and beddings, they still didn’t feel it? This seems fishy, enormously wrong!”

Su Zian slapped his hands!

Correct, at that time, he was so furious, he became confused. How could he not realize the truth of such a simple matter?

Granted, even under an extremely passionate embrace, the fire was quickly spreading towards their butts, why didn’t they extinguish the fire? Why didn’t they run away earlier? Ultimately, they were trapped in the room, waiting for people to catch the couple in the act?

This was simply impossible.

What Madam said was right, this matter was extremely fishy!

Su Zian’s pair of thick eyebrows knotted tightly, his expression was serious. His eyes bursting with flames, hatefully said: “Who framed Wan’er?! If this general

were to find out, then I will have him dismembered into ten thousand pieces!”

Under his raging temper, Su Zian slapped down his hand. The table made of pear flower wood immediately turned to dust.

Now, his expression had hazed over, both eyes were murderous and radiating with violence.

Madam Su pondered for a short while, afterwards, she frowned slightly and slowly said. “Wan’er has always been well-behaved and abided by etiquette. She never had a dispute with another person and never incurred other people’s hatred. Why would someone frame her?”

Su Zian only coldly smiled: “You only know the well-behaved and proper Wan’er, but you don’t know how arrogant and despotic she is behind people’s back. Let’s not talk about outsiders, just talking about how she treats Luo’er....”

## Chapter 173 – Schemes within a scheme (5)

---

Suddenly, Su Zian's expression changed and his speech abruptly stopped.

It was not that Su Wan had no enemies. She and Su Luo definitely had old grievances. Moreover, their relationship was very strained.

Last time, Wan'er had slandered Luo'er and had even dragged him over to investigate. It was tough to say if Luo'er would not harbor hard feelings.

When Su Zian thought of this, his expression indeterminately cycled between overcast and clear.

He was immersed in his own world, completely unaware of Madam Su nearby. The corner of her mouth lifted into an obvious smiling expression.

Madam Su had spent a lot of effort to make Su Zian fix his suspicion on Su Luo. She would naturally continue to persist.

He only saw her frown, and quietly said. "Luo'er...it shouldn't be? They are both siblings, how could they have enmity? It's not that this wife is biased, rather, Luo'er's natural disposition is timid and gutless. Furthermore, she doesn't even have any spirit strength, then how could she possibly frame Wan'er?"

Su Zian waved his hand.

His wife was too kind-hearted. She never thought that people could be bad. How could she be aware of the sinisterness of people's hearts.

He already knew that Luo'er and Wan'er had a feud between them.

As to Luo'er's natural timid and gutless disposition...in Su Zian's mind suddenly appeared the scenarios from the recent few times he saw Su Luo.

The Su Luo before was perhaps really gutless, low-profile and timid. However, that day when the crown prince came to withdraw the engagement,

her behavior was completely without inferiority nor weakness. On the contrary, she even dared to provoke the crown prince!

On top of that, adding that recent matter, when she was wrongly accused by Wan'er. Afterwards she was neither servile nor overbearing. She was rational and acted accordingly to help herself refute the accusations. Her words were sharp, every sentence was reasonable. Even he, himself, was choked off by her.

Was this Su Luo really that low-profile and timid Su Luo from his wife's mouth? Apart from not having any spirit strength, her temperament compared to before was simply changed beyond recognition.

Madam Su saw Su Zian's brows knot tightly, and she laughed grimly in her heart. Her face, however, didn't even bat an eyelid and said. "General, Wan'er was incriminated and framed to such an extent, her later life has already been ruined. You shouldn't also ruin Luo'er, ah. Even if we consider this matter to be done by Luo'er, we should.... also pretend as if we saw nothing."

After being married for many years, Madam Su could accurately grasp Su Zian's pulse.

These kind of words, she used retreat to advance.

As expected, Su Zian did not disappoint her.

"How could this be allowed! Absolutely out of the question!" Su Zian had an indifferent expression, not allowing another opinion and said. "If this matter was indeed Su Luo's doing, then she must pay the price for this matter. This general absolutely will not be swayed even a little bit by personal relationship!"

"Come!" Su Zian loudly roared.

The imperial bodyguards keeping watch at the doorway immediately came in.

"From the black-clothed man's person, start to investigate, you must investigate this thoroughly until it becomes clear!" Su Zian loudly commanded. "No, this matter must not be investigated openly. You need to remember to investigate this secretly, absolutely cannot check on this with

great fanfare.”

“Yes sir.” Zi Mo bowed, accepted the order and left.

The suspicion was already planted, she just needed to wait for it to grow roots and bud. Madam Su looked at Su Zian’s gloomy expression, her mood actually became very good.

She returned to the main house. Her mood was exceptionally good and she ate an extra bowl of lotus seed soup.

At Madam Su’s side, Nanny Zhao flatteringly moved close to her, lowered her voice and said: “Madam, I have already sent down the instructions, they will make their move tonight.”

Madam Su smiled a smile that was not quite a smile, and said. “Fine, remember, this matter must be done carefully. Not even a bit of sound should be leaked out.”

Seeing the back of the leaving Nanny Zhao, a crazy and cruel light flashed through Madam Su’s eyes.

These concubine’s daughters, seeing even one of them offends her, made her feel sick.

## Chapter 174 – Schemes within a scheme (6)

---

Their existence, repeatedly reminded her of Su Zian's unfaithfulness to her.

Formerly, in order to preserve her face, she could tolerate them hanging around in front of her eyes. However, now that Su Wan was already ruined for the greater part, she could ignore her. For the rest of Su Wan's life, she wouldn't be able to crawl back up.

However, she still had a final worth that could be exploited.

Right now, only Su Luo was left.

Thinking of Su Luo, the maliciousness in Madam Su's eyes became even more intense.

Back then, when the general admitted that woman into Su Manor. Everyday, they were a loving affectionate couple and that woman had been unfailingly favored.

If it weren't for her finally taking action to personally put that woman to death, maybe the position of the general's wife would already be that slut's.

She didn't know if Su Luo's, that little slut's daughter, luck could be considered good or bad.

If Su Luo had grown to look somewhat like that little slut, then Madam Su would have already taken action to have her killed.

Maybe it was also because Su Luo did not grow to look like that little slut, so she could not obtain the general's favor.

If it weren't for the fact that she was a girl, she would really be suspicious that the child had been switched by that slut.

There were actually mother-daughter pairs that grew up to look completely different, it was truly hard for people to believe.

Madam Su leisurely and unworriedly sampled the fragrant tea. Whenever she thought about how she would get rid of both concubine's daughters in one shot, her mood became extremely carefree.

That same night.

The night was pitch-black like ink.

In Su Luo's dilapidated courtyard.

Su Luo was not affected at all by Su Wan's incident. She also had no idea that she was being targeted by Madam Su.

As before, she continued to sleep, regardless of day or night, sleeping from when twilight lighted up the sky to the darkness of the night.

Meanwhile, her spirit was in her space, arduously practicing to cultivate the great Dimensional Imprint.

Ever since she last used it on the black-clothed man, Su Luo was extremely optimistic about this great Dimensional Imprint.

She continuously engaged in practice drills, and now, that originally tadpole-sized little black dot had grown a lot. This time, when it was condensed out, it was the size of an apple.

Su Luo experimented with it, the power compared to when she had previously used the little black dot had as much as doubled.

This discovery immediately made her ecstatic.

However at the same time, she was also grieved to discover that her crystal stones had almost all been consumed.

The source stones taken from Elder Zi Huo's cave, at that time were peeled open by the adorable little dragon. Afterwards, the majority of the top-notch crystal stones were then used to save Nangong Liuyun's life.

By then, only a few tiny pieces remained in her hand.

Moreover, these few pieces were not exclusively for her use. She had to leave

some for the adorable little dragon to eat as snacks.

Su Luo discovered that the adorable little dragon could also grow and advance in levels through gobbling up the crystal stones.

Therefore, what she now lacked the most were crystal stones. If she had more crystal stones, then the speed of her cultivation would advance by leaps and bounds.

If she didn't have crystal stones, then her cultivation speed would greatly decrease and eventually become stagnant.

However, how could crystal stones be so easy to obtain? Couldn't you see that all those great influential families were reluctant to use it?

If she were to buy it, the price would simply scare her to death.

Therefore, the only method was to gamble on source stones.

However...Su Luo sighed. Currently, she was absolutely the poorest beggar among beggars. Because from the top to the bottom of her body, she didn't even have a single gold coin.

Without gold coins, how could she go and gamble on stones?

It truly was that a single monetary coin could confound a hero.

Su Luo tossed and turned on her bed, having a hard time falling asleep. She continuously pondered on how to earn her first pot of gold.

Once she had her first pot of gold, then relying on the adorable little dragon's ability to find treasures, she would absolutely win a bundle from gambling stones. Nobody would be able to match her success rate.

The night gradually became darker.

All around, not a sound could be heard. There were only the sounds from the blowing wind passing by.

All of a sudden, the adorable little dragon appeared. Who knew from which hole he popped out of, in his mouth, he had a sparkling and shiny thing.

## Chapter 175 – Schemes within a scheme (7)

---

Su Luo snatched it away and looked at it, immediately, she was struck dumb.

Could it be that the gods especially favored her?

Was she really the bastard daughter of the goddess of fortune?

At this moment, even she herself somewhat believed it.

The thing being held in the adorable little dragon's mouth was none other than a gold coin. It glittered with golden light, authentic-looking, it was a gold coin cast by the imperial government.

What was strange was that this gold coin had some moist soil on it.

“Where did it come from? Is there more?” Su Luo turned over and got off her bed, and in high spirits, held the adorable little dragon. She poked at his head.

This baby was simply too cute. Everytime she landed in a predicament, he would always lend a helping hand.

Su Luo discovered that he had astonishing insight with regards to treasures.

In a nutshell, he had the instinctual ability to hunt down treasure.

Within the range of his body's ability, as long as there was a treasure, it wasn't capable of escaping his exceptionally sensitive nose.

He could actually find a gold coin in this dilapidated little courtyard. His ability was really too formidable.

“Awoo, awoo——” Both of the adorable little dragon's eyes shone, he bit Su Luo's trouser leg, indicating that she should follow after him.

This gold coin had moist soil on it, quite clearly, it had been dug out of the ground. Could this dilapidated little courtyard really have some buried gold coins?

Countless questions flashed through Su Luo's heart. Her footsteps automatically followed after the adorable little dragon, leaving him ahead to show the way.

The little thing only ran for a short while before stopping. He lowered his head towards the little hole and started wailing "awoo, awoo..."

Here, there was a huge Locus tree and it was also in Su Luo's courtyard.

Su Luo went closer and looked, both of her eyes shone like the adorable little dragon's.

Sparkling, shining gold coins were piled full in a trunk. She visually estimated that there were about ten thousand gold coins in there.

How could there be so many gold coins in this place? Su Luo did not let the riches go to her head. She continued to think and felt that something about this seemed fishy.

She cautiously picked up some soil and placed it under her nose to carefully sniff at.

Again, she picked up that single gold coin to scrupulously examine it.

There was no problem with the soil, nor any problem with the gold coin... However, when Su Luo saw the number for the year on the back of the gold coin, her mouth hooked into a non-existent cold smile.

The wooden trunk was clearly made to look old, it even had a faint odor of decay. Everything about this seemed to indicate that this wooden trunk had been buried for a long time.

However, the year on the back of the gold coin...ha, ha, it was actually cast this year. This, how could it be possible?

In her courtyard, a pile of gold coins of unknown origins had appeared...For what purpose?

Who arranged this? Also, who had designs on her?

Su Luo looked at these gold coins, her mouth curving into a very dangerous sneer.

These gold coins, it was a waste to not take it.

Su Luo had originally thought to place all these gold coins within her space. However, she suddenly recalled the previous time when she was being chased by Er Huang...The space matter, she should still be more cautious of such a wonderful thing. If she was not careful and other people found out, then she would never experience another peaceful day.

As a result, Su Luo deliberately made a few roundtrips. She slowly moved the gold coins in small batches into her own courtyard.

Finally, she took a shovel and filled the little hole, then flattened it, restoring it to the previous condition.

Behind the wall, a sharp pair of eyes silently gazed at Su Luo. Watching her when she discovered those gold coins and her eyes shone with greed. Then, watched her as she split the gold coins into small batches to be carried away time after time....

Her eyes flashed with a sinister radiance, a cruel and cold smirk emerged at the corner of her mouth.

Afterwards, she quietly turned and left.

One could only see her figure rapidly flash by and quickly arrive at a dignified and grand courtyard.

This was the central housing where Madam Su resided.

## Chapter 176 – Irrefutable evidence

---

“Reporting back to Madam. The fourth Miss really did dig out all the gold coins and take it back. She didn’t leave a single gold coin behind.” The mysterious young woman who was standing in front of Madam Su stated with reverence.

“Very good, continue to keep a close watch on her. You absolutely must not give her the chance to ship out all the gold coins.” Madam Su’s beautiful eyes had a cruel and evil smile within them.

Su Luo, as expected, was still too inferior to be shown in public. She could be taken in by only a little bit of gold coins.

Ha, ha, Su Luo, ah, Su Luo. These ten thousand gold coins, you should take it as accompaniment for your burial. In any case, you won’t be able to live for much longer.

Whenever Madam Su recalled that after this matter was settled, she would never see these two concubines’ daughters, her mood would be especially good. The corner of her mouth tilted into a joyful arc.

After a few days passed in a row, those days were all very tranquil.

On this day in the study.

Su Zian looked at the results of his investigation. His sharp eyebrows were deeply wrinkled and his complexion was exceptionally ugly.

On top of the thick pile of investigation reports, it was neatly and clearly written that Su Wan’s matter was related to Su Luo, and linked to her in countless ways.

Su Luo had the motive to harm her.

Because previously, Su Wan was aiming for her, therefore, Su Luo harbored hard feelings. It was to the extent that she would take her revenge against Su

Wan.

Moreover, on this investigative report, it had included strong conclusive proof!

Su Luo had actually issued a task at the Mercenary Union and the details of the task was for a man to go rape Su Manor's third Miss, Su Wan!

Seeing the flamboyant handwriting on the contract, Su Zian's calm expression was abruptly covered with dark clouds.

This was Su Luo's handwriting, there was no mistake.

Originally, he would not be able to recognize it, but the previous time, he had glanced at those sacred scriptures which Su Luo had copied for him. He discovered that Su Luo's letters were unexpectedly strong and energetic, so he had an impression of her handwriting.

Madam Su looked at the Great General Su and again looked at the black and white investigative report. She frowned and softly said. "Is this investigative report true? This wife feels that no matter how bad Luo'er's heart was, she could not do this. General, you mustn't so easily make a decision, okay?"

"That's because you are too kind-hearted. You simply do not understand the viciousness of a person's heart, Madam." After Su Zian consoled Madam Su, speaking of Su Luo, his complexion became ashen. His eyes were like two flames leaping out. "The investigative report was personally inspected by your husband. How could it be false?"

Madam Su's expression remained calm and collected, secretly, she disagreed while sneering repeatedly in her heart.

How could it not be false? This investigative report was undoubtedly manipulated from behind the scenes by her.

She could absolutely prove that this investigative report was completely false.

However, as the boss that pulled the strings from behind him, Madam Su was naturally not stupid enough to say it out loud. Moreover, she had to add more oil and vinegar to inflame Su Zian's rage even more.

"But, Luo'er she... should be unlikely do it?"

"Humph! Come, go tie up Su Luo for this general and bring her to the main

hall!” Su Zian raised his head and angrily commanded.

This matter must be made clear, otherwise, keeping such a ruthless-minded girl, then Su Manor wouldn't get to pass a single good day!

Inside the main hall.

On top of a luxurious, beautiful imperial styled chair was Su Zian, with his eyebrows knotted and looking coldly solemn. He sat on the seat of honor with awe-inspiring dignity.

Madam Su, with an amiable expression, sat by his side. Her delicate face had a faintly worried and helpless expression.

Su Jingyu stood under them, his serene appearance made it hard to see his expression.

Su Luo was brought to the main hall by guards.

“Tracherous woman! Quickly kneel down!” Su Zian's ice-cold voice lacked even a trace of heat. His eyes seemed to harbor two flames.

Su Luo's thin eyebrows wrinkled slightly, conforming with the norms of society, she made her salutations. Afterwards, her eyes swept around and with a light voice, asked. “Daddy, adopting this pose for the situation and also used such a heavy hand to invite daughter to come. Don't know what you have to instruct?”

# Chapter 177 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (1)

---

Su Zian's face was dignified, there was no sign of anger due to his position. His eyes were ice-cold without a trace of warmth. "Loathsome girl, what more do you have to say?"

Su Luo's expression did not change, but her heart secretly became alert. Able to make Su Zian this angry, it really was not easy, but she really didn't know what matter they were yelling about.

She had an indifferent and calm expression, and without any waves of alarm, asked. "Daddy, what are you angry about?"

To have done such a thing, and afterwards still able to use completely unfeeling and unsuspecting eyes to look at him! Su Zian furiously growled. "Speak! Your third older sister's matter, wasn't it caused by you?"

So it was Su Wan's matter? Su Luo's mind flashed with traces of misgivings. She remembered very clearly, when she started the fire, there weren't any witnesses nor evidence to prove she did it. So her cheap father made a solemn vow and placed the criminal charges on her body. Could it be that he was scaring her?

Su Luo flashed a pair of bewildered pitch-black eyes, with a confused expression. "Third sister's matter, how could I have done it? Daddy, you also couldn't help looking at me with too high of a regard?"

Currently, she was weak but remained standing. Her brows were without a trace of guilty conscience and she looked at a loss. It also looked incredulous... She acted not too cold nor too hot, but just right.

Su Zian gave a heavy and cold grunt. With a scattering sound, he threw a stack

of papers towards Su Luo where it rained over her!

The paper from Cheng Xin Tang (1) were sharp, its edges were as sharp as a knife. If not careful, her delicate cheeks would very easily be cut.

Su Luo avoided it without batting an eye and with poise, she picked up the scattered papers from the ground. She collected all of it together in her hand and flipped through it page by page.

Her happy and content expression, flipping through the pages of a book as if nobody was there...She took this place as if it was a library and not a court where cases were trialed!

Simply, simply so arrogant that no one else mattered!

Su Zian held back a breath full of anger in his chest, it couldn't go up nor down. He really held it back until he was red in the face.

His pair of bell-shaped eyes unwaveringly stared at Su Luo.

After looking through it page by page, Su Luo held that stack of paper in her hands. She lifted her eyes and looked towards Su Zian, eyes sparkling with radiance. "Daddy, you trust the words on this report?"

"Humph!" Su Zian gave a heavy snort, "Now what more do you have to say?!"

He had already voiced his meaning very clearly. He believed in this investigation report and he had hundred thousands percent confidence in it.

Su Jingyu's expression was indifferent, his treacherous eyes stared at Su Luo. His face was full of endless condemnation. "Su Luo! How could you do such a vicious and ruthless thing? Even if Wan'er was in the wrong, she is still your big sister! You did such a thing, which has already ruined the rest of Wan'er's life. Haven't you realized it?"

Su Luo's gaze blandly shot towards Su Jingyu.

If he hadn't said anything, she would've forgotten this older brother.

Madam Su who was nearby, tenderly and softly scolded: "Jingyu, how could you speak? Everything is to be decided by your father."

Madam Su worriedly looked at Su Luo: "Luo Luo, don't be afraid. This matter

may have been started by somebody spreading rumors to create trouble. As long as you say what you know, your father would not treat you unjustly.”

Su Luo’s facial expression did not change, but she secretly sneered in her heart.

Madam Su had such a smooth-talking mouth.

Even though on the surface, she chided Su Jingyu and appeared to appease her. However, every word and every sentence did not deviate from her cheap dad. She deliberately tried to provoke his rage, just waiting for it to explode.

Masterful, she really was a master.

Su Zian indeed followed her expectations and heavily slapped his armrest. “Su Luo! Do you admit it or not!”

*1) Cheng Xin Tang is one of the best quality and durable paper made by Hans during the the Five Dynasties and Ten Kingdoms era.*

# Chapter 178 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (2)

---

If she were to admit to this charge, Su Luo knew it would not be as simple as just being driven out of Su Manor.

According to Madam Su's methods, how could she let Su Luo live?

Furthermore, carrying this type of charge, how could it sound well? Su Luo was not an idiot, she naturally would not admit to it.

When she had acted on this matter, she had clearly understood and envisioned all the causes and effects step by step. However, she simply could not have imagined that Madam Su would insert herself into this matter from another direction. To the extent that it had made this simple matter unexpectedly more complex.

Anyway it didn't matter, she wanted to properly contend with Madam Su to take a look at the latter's abilities.

"I didn't do it, how would I admit to it? Admit to what?" Su Luo was neither servile nor overbearing, her expression was tranquil and calm.

"Still a dead duck, being reluctant to admit to your mistake!" On the contrary, Su Zian was so infuriated that he started to laugh. "Good, good, good! Since you are so reluctant to admit to your mistake, then let the witness approach. Let's see how you will object!"

"Come, let Mr. Mo approach!" Su Zian's cold and sober gaze stared at Su Luo. His eyes were full of murderous intent that was almost about to overflow.

Mr. Mo was about fifty years old, clothed in a medium-classed light garment. He had a sharp mouth and monkey cheeks, a pair of eyes that spun and darted

around, giving off a shrewd light.

Allowing this type of man to testify? Cynical light flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

"Mr Mo, what happened that day, you should carefully tell us." Su Zian, in order to ferret out the troublemaker Su Luo with regards to this matter, had become somewhat devilishly insane.

Mr. Mo was the overseer at the Mercenary Union, the release of assignments was managed by him.

Mr. Mo, gazed straight ahead, after deferentially giving Su Zian a salute, then clearly stated. "Reporting to the Venerable General, in accordance with the Mercenary Union's rules, it's not allowed to casually leak out a customer's information. However, since it is the great general who demanded the investigation, the Mercenary Union would not dare do anything but to cooperate."

"Okay, do not hesitate to speak, this general will naturally go greet your union's president." Su Zian waved his hands, indicating that he relax his mind and simply just speak.

"Yes." Mr. Mo's eyes dropped and respectfully said. "On that day, a lady came to issue a task with rewards. The great general also knows the Mercenary Union allows any task to be released. Only it remains to be seen if anyone dares to take it. When that lady's task appeared, almost no one dared to take it. But a member in desperate need of money finally took on the task."

"What was the task?" Su Zian duly asked.

Mr. Mo hesitated for a short time, he stole a glance at Su Luo, with a sly spirited appearance of wanting to speak but not daring to do so. Finally, as if he had decided at last, he determinedly, tightly clenched his fists. His expression became very serious and his tone following after became more cautious. "It's...to tarnish Su family's third Miss!"

"The lady that issued the task....who was it?!"

Su Zian gritted his teeth and asked Mr. Mo, emphasising every word. His pair of eyes which was bursting with a millennium-old ice that were like swords,

was fixated on Su Luo.

He inwardly guessed, the unsophisticated Su Luo, in this kind of situation, no matter how she tried to disguise it, she was bound to lose her head out of fear.

However, what made him disappointed was not only did Su Luo not panic, but her expression was like before, without a ripple or a wave. That pair of pitch-black eyes even had a curious radiance.

What was she curious about?

Shouldn't she be more apprehensive?

Su Zian was speechless.

Su Jingyu and Madam Su's hearts inwardly became alert.

Originally they thought that Su Luo, this loathsome girl, would be easy to deal with, however now, it seemed as if it would be a little troublesome.

Su Luo's eyes narrowed. She laughed grimly and repeatedly in her heart.

It really was indeed a bother to them. In order to deal with her they enacted such a brilliant play in front of her.

# Chapter 179 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (3)

---

She pitied her cheap father, who believed everything was under his control. How would he know he was merely a blade in another's hand. He was the borrowed knife used to help another to kill her. Not only did he not know, but he even believed himself to be infallible. He truly was pathetic but someone who was pitiful could also have a hateful aspect!

Bystanders might not have noticed, but Su Luo, who always observed everything thoroughly, noticed. When Mr. Mo was speaking, his gaze would occasionally shoot towards Nanny Zhao at Madam Su's side. There seemed to be an unknown tacit understanding between the two.

In the end, what kind of tacit understanding...It really made people somewhat puzzled, ah, puzzled.

"Mr. Mo, do not hesitate to speak. On that day, who was the lady that issued this task!" Su Jingyu saw that Mr. Mo appeared somewhat hesitant. Suddenly, Su Jingyu's expression became apprehensive, and standing for upright justice and righteousness, he spoke.

Mr. Mo looked at Su Jingyu and then glanced at Su Zian. Unexpectedly, his eyes meet with Su Luo's.

Momentarily, it seemed as if he had received a fright, and his eyes unconsciously avoided hers.

"It is....It is..." Mr. Mo since the beginning had his head lowered, not daring to lift his eyes, and his voice was also intermittent.

"You should feel assured, you will have this general to give you justice for

everything! This matter will also not be spread out. With regards to your job at the Mercenary Union, it will also absolutely not create any complications for you!” Su Zian guaranteed.

He was the Great General, having had the position for a long time, his body had a kind of calm, self-assured domineering aura.

“Clap, clap clap——”The sounds of applause suddenly came from the doorway of the main hall. That sound was intermittent, as if it was rather interested.

Su Zian’s sharp eyebrows rose and roared toward the outside. “Who’s outside?!” His next sentence was roared at the guards protecting the doorway. “What’s the matter? Hadn’t I instructed not to allow anyone inside?”

This matter, no matter what, could be said to be the Su Manor’s family scandal. Su Zian would absolutely not allow this matter to spread outside. However, now an outsider had actually come in?

Yet, in the wake of the sound of the arriving footsteps, Su Zian’s expression changed slightly.

A group of people escorted that god-like man, who slowly set foot inside the main hall.

He was accustomed to standing in the front, with a pair of purple eyes that was incomparably apathetic.

One could only see his body, which appeared graceful and honorable.

The crown prince?

It turned out to be the crown prince!

Why did he come here at this time?

Furthermore, following behind him were two females in the prime of their youth. Su Zian recognized them, one of them was Su Xi and the other one was...

“Qing’er, you came out?”

Su Zian hadn’t had a chance to speak, when Madam Su already excitedly stood up. Her body appeared to tremble slightly, the reason being that she was too happy.

The Qing'er from Madam Su's mouth was Su Qing. She was Su family's second Miss, Su Xi's fully blood-related older sister.

Because she had exceptionally good talent, from a very young age, she had been accepted by Grandmaster Lan Hai as his personal disciple. She was instructed with great care while following alongside her teacher.

Half a year ago, she arrived at the third rank's bottleneck phase, and heeding Grandmaster Lan Hai's instructions, then went into seclusion to cultivate.

Now that she had come out, could it be?

Madam Su and Su Zian both stared at Su Qing, full of expectations. At this point in time, they had completely forgotten Su Luo's matter.

Compared to the always proud Su Qing, why would Su Luo even matter?

"Father, Mother." Su Qing stepped forward to pay her respects to her parents.

# Chapter 180 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (4)

---

“Qing'er, You....” Su Zian and Madam Su both bit their lips. They nervously and expectantly looked at Su Qing. Awaiting news about what they were hoping for, from her mouth.

Su Qing lightly smiled and nodded her head slightly, “Qing'er was lucky and did not dishonor her name. This time's seclusion into closed door cultivation helped me advance to the fourth rank.”

Her words were clear and nonchalant. However, it possessed a kind of arrogance of looking down on people that was proud and aloof.

Indeed, being able to advance to the fourth rank at her age, her prospects were simply beyond measure.

It was important to note that apart from His Highness Prince Jin, whose formidable and abnormal innate gift allowed him to advance to the seventh rank before twenty years old, even surveying the entire Eastern Ling empire, people who were capable of advancing to the fourth rank at her age could be counted on one hand. Only a very few people could be counted.

Having heard what was said, Su Zian was immediately surprised but ecstatic!

“Good! Good, good, good! Simply great! I, Su Zian, having really amassed a lot of fortune and virtuous deeds for most of my life, only then the wonderful daughter that I was longing for had come! Hahahahaaa——” Su Zian was so happy that he laughed heartily. He had an expression of being extremely proud of himself.

Madam Su was even happier. She held onto Su Qing's hand and smiled unceasingly. She nodded her head and repeatedly praised her daughter.

Out of the corner of Su Qing's eyes, she glanced at Su Xi who was at her side. Seeing her lovable and charming little face with her red lips starting to pout, Su Qing's gaze casted towards Su Zian and smilingly said. "Congratulations to Father and Mother for two simultaneous happy events in the family."

"Oh? Besides your news, there is an additional happy occasion?" Su Zian said with a gentle voice.

Right now, he simply dearly loved Su Qing to the bones.

"Daddy still doesn't know, right? This time, Xi'er's luck is even better. She had a fortuitous meeting on the road. Now, she is already at the third rank." Su Qing smilingly said.

"Third rank? Xi'er, is this true?" Regarding this matter, the happiest was none other than Madam Su.

Each and every one of her children had become a person worthy of respect, allowing her to be very satisfied.

"Ah!" Seeing everyone's eyes concentrated on her own body, Su Xi's originally prideful expression suddenly became somewhat shy. She put on the appearance of a lady, lowered her head and nodded.

"Good! Very good! Simply great! Indeed, the heavens have really assisted my Su family!" Su Zian was unable to suppress being proud of himself and started to laugh heartily: "Really worthy of being my, Su Zian's, daughter. Really capable of earning face for your father!"

He slanted his head towards Madam Su with a yielding and laughing voice and said, "Madam wife, you gave birth to good daughters. Each and every one of them is worthy of respect. This general is overjoyed. Unlike those two concubine's daughters. One compared to the other, is even more useless and good-for-nothing; annoying and bothersome. Haha. The ancients truly did not deceive me. The fruits from the first wife compared to the concubine's are indeed as different as the sky and earth!"

Su Zian now completely lacked any misgivings about Su Luo's mood. In front of everyone, he hardly tried to mask his show of love and bias towards the other two daughters.

A thread of previously absent mocking expression flashed through Su Luo's eyes.

A third ranked Su Xi?

A fourth ranked Su Qing?

It really was indeed formidable, ah. Their cultivation practice speed was really fast, ah. She was really about to die from envy, ah.

Compared to them, she really was a second-rate little loser, in the family, the one with her head was at the lowest position.

However, if Su Zian knew, that Su Luo had merely used a month's time to advance from nothing to the second rank, it would very likely scare him to death.

Because even Su Xi, the little genius that he had always labeled as gifted, had started her cultivation practice at five years old. She had cultivated for the entire eight years and merely reached the pinnacle of the second rank. If it was not for a coincidental opportunity this time, who knew when she would break through to the third rank.

However, Su Luo had reached the second rank only using the short period of a month, exactly thirty days.

This kind of cultivation speed, not merely surveying the Eastern Ling empire, even surveying the entire continent, one would not find another's cultivation speed that could compare to hers.

# Chapter 181 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (5)

---

It was a pity that besides Su Luo herself, nobody else knew about her dramatic rise in cultivation speed.

Her cheap father was even more in the dark.

However, Su Zian's remark contrarily linked back to Su Luo, and so the crown prince once again redirected the topic to the main discussion. One could see him lightly smile, "The Great General Su, your residence appears to be very lively?"

With the crown prince present, Su Zian didn't want to continue hearing the case.

Because you don't wash your dirty linen in public.

If the crown prince were to find out the stuff that occurred to Su Wan's body, then....it may implicate his and Su Xi's affair.

After all, even though they were interested in each other, but there still wasn't a real imperial decree to confirm the marriage.

Su Zian could only be seen dry coughing twice to cover up his awkwardness and gave a hollow laugh, saying: "Allowing His Highness the crown prince to see something ridiculous. Actually, it really isn't a big deal. It's merely the noise from the fighting among daughters in the family, seeing it is to laugh at it."

Su Zian's hints were already quite clear. He didn't want this matter to continue, at least not when the crown prince was present. He wanted to end it here early.

However, the crown prince appeared to not have heard his hints. He could only be seen sitting upright at a high position, and raised an eyebrow at Su Luo while

smiling not quite a smile, “Oh? It’s the residence’s fourth Miss again? Looks like the Great General Su’s education of a daughter still has some lapses.”

“Yes, yes, yes, allowing His Highness the crown prince to see such a laughable thing.” Su Zian rushed to take over the subject of the conversation, right now he just wanted to change the subject.

Who would have thought, that the crown prince was a step ahead to speak. “Just now, this Highness, at the door, heard Mr. Mo appear to testify against someone? This Highness couldn’t have misheard right?”

It was obvious that His Highness the crown prince had grabbed onto this matter and wasn’t going to let go.

Su Zian had miscalculated.

He never expected that the crown prince would be so narrow-minded.

It was because of one sentence by Su Luo at that time, ‘the crown prince couldn’t lift it up’. Consequently, His Highness the crown prince’s anger had thoroughly landed on Su Luo.

Normally not seeing her daily, he could forget it. Now, he just happened to run into her, not taking advantage to hit her while she was down, then it wouldn’t be His Highness the crown prince.

Su Zian’s forehead was covered in a drizzling layer of cold sweat. His gloomy face hinted towards Mr. Mo. He hoped that Mr. Mo could evade the issue, then everything would be well.

But, what kind of person was Mr. Mo?

He was an opportunist best adept at weighing people’s words and observing their facial expressions.

The Great General Su’s government position originally could scare him, but now, compared to His Highness the crown prince, the Great General Su’s rank was lower.

Moreover, unaware of what thoughts stemmed from Madam Su, unexpectedly, she also didn’t block Mr. Mo’s idea.

Hence, Mr. Mo pretended to not have received hints from the Great General

Su, bowed to His Highness the crown prince and said: “Reporting to His Highness the crown prince, the person this lowly person is testifying against is... is the person just now spoken of, the fourth Miss!”

Su Luo? It was really her!

The crown prince’s pair of elegant eyelids lifted up, his solemn and cold eyes were filled with a murderous aura. He was only seen leisurely saying, “Oh? You will testify against this fourth Miss? What are you testifying about?”

Su Zian’s heart was so depressed. He knew that now, no matter what he did, he couldn’t conceal it.

Since he couldn’t conceal it, then it was also fine, he could take advantage of this chance to tidy up the family.

In any case, he didn’t lack daughters. He didn’t lack naturally gifted daughters that brought him pride.

Therefore, Su Zian’s expression was merely indifferent, maintaining his silence.

Mr. Mo saw everyone’s gaze focus upon his body. He lifted his eyes which were clear and determined. He firmly stated. “Your Highness the crown prince is unaware, previously, a person came to the Mercenary Union issuing a task to tarnish the third Miss Su. And also, the person who issued the task is the fourth Miss Su.”

“Gasp—” Mr. Mo had just finished speaking.

One could only hear the sound of simultaneous breaths being released from all around.

# Chapter 182 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (6)

---

The Su family's fourth Miss had actually gone to the Mercenary Union to issue a task. The task was to tarnish the Su family's third Miss? This, if this were to spread out...

"Wan'er, a few days ago, already..." Madam Su, appearing to be frightened, resulting in the suspense building thereby adding more fuel to the fire.

"What? Third older sister had already been..." Su Xi was absolutely shocked!

Even though the last time, Su Wan caused her to fall into the water, however, her careful apologies for a long time had already compensated her loss. The ill-feelings between her and Su Wan had already been eliminated.

Now, Su Xi's heart only thought of all of Su Wan's good sides, how could she even consider her bad sides?

One could only see her rushing in a rage towards Su Luo, pointing at Su Luo furiously and yelling out: "Speak! Is this really true!? You really went as far as to issue a task asking people to tarnish third older sister?!"

Too malicious! Really too malicious!

Under numerous denouncements, ridicules, derisions and despising looks that gathered together, Su Luo's face could unexpectedly maintain an unwavering smile. People couldn't help but admit that her mental abilities were really formidable.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth rose slightly into an arc, slowly shaking her head. "If you want to condemn someone, you don't have to worry about the pretext."

"You still won't admit it? The Mercenary Union's administrator of this matter

could actually wrongly accuse you?” Su Jingyu had a resentful look, and a manner of things having failed to meet his expectations. He pointed to Su Luo and lamented bitterly, “Su Luo, ah, Su Luo. When did you become this vicious and merciless? How could you do this? No matter what is said Wan’er is still your older sister!”

Su Qing did not say a word, however, the corner of her eyes were lifted very high and could not conceal what was shown. She despised and disdained this younger sister born from a concubine.

She was merely the concubine’s daughter that she barely looked at. Merely an ant that she could step on as she wished. She couldn’t draw an iota of interest from this ice-beauty Su Qing.

“Originally, it was not something I did, so how could I admit to it?” Su Luo spread out her hands and very helplessly shrugged her shoulders.

What she said was not false, the person who issued the task was Su Wan, ah. As for whatever reasons that finally led the retribution to land on Su Wan’s body, as for this...it could only be said that the heavens above had eyes.

“Good! Good! Death is near at hand and you still won’t admit to it! There was evidence given against you, and you still dare to not admit!” Su Jingyu was so angry that almost his entire body was trembling. The finger he had pointed at Su Luo continued to tremble non-stop. His anger seemed to have reached the peak and turned his head towards Mr. Mo. “Mr. Mo, whenever tasks are issued at the Mercenary Union, there should be a record, right?”

Mr. Mo sighed, nodded his head and silently took out a book from his chest area. He lifted up both hands to hand it over to His Highness the crown prince.

His Highness the crown prince took it under Mr. Mo’s prompt, his slender and sculpted finger unhurriedly flipped to the designated page.

“Unexpectedly, it really is here. However, this handwriting seems to be quite elegant and spirited. As expected, the personality compared to the writing is very different.” The crown prince tossed the book to Su Jingyu, staring at Su Luo with a smile. His eyes radiated an evil laugh that could devour a person.

The expression that he looked at Su Luo was similar to looking at a prisoner

locked in the cell on the eve of her execution with nowhere to escape to.

Not needing to do the job himself in order to deal with this loathsome girl to give vent to his anger was also pretty good.

After everybody had seen and passed it around, finally, the book ended up in Su Zian's hand. In a rage, he tossed the book at Su Luo. "Human testimony and material evidence are all here. What more do you have to say?"

The human testimony was naturally from Mr. Mo.

The material evidence...

Su Luo had a smile that was not quite a smile and loudly read, "The person who signed, Su Luo..."

All of a sudden, she burst into loud laughter. She was laughing so hard that she held her stomach, as if she was unable to breathe.

# Chapter 183 – A hundred mouths can't be refuted (7)

---

Everyone in the room speechlessly looked at Su Luo. Su Zian's eyebrows knitted together, and he thundered, "What are you laughing at?"

Su Zian's heart secretly thought, perhaps this loathsome girl knew her capital offense was impossible to escape from, thus she was scared senseless?

Su Luo, with great difficulty, finally stopped laughing. She waved the book. Her eyes sweeping everyone present one by one, and finally, her black as ink eyes met Su Zian's.

Her eyes had an obvious mocking expression.

"Honorable father, since you've seen it, whose name is it that is signed on this?" Su Luo raised her eyebrow, her voice unhurriedly asked.

It was as if, in the room, the martial artists deliberately exuding a strong overbearing pressure did not faze her at all.

"You can't even recognize your own name?" Su Zian frowned, "Su Luo, I'm warning you, it's useless to play the fool. You had best stop while you can."

Su Luo laughed and shaking her head, slowly said, "Yes, the two words on this paper are Su Luo, however, the biggest flaw also lies in these two words.

Flaw????

There was actually a flaw?

Mr. Mo and Madam Su both frowned slightly at that moment, in their opinion, the evidence prepared had been completely foolproof, how could there be a flaw?

"What flaw?" Su Zian's eyebrows knitted together.

**“It’s very simple reasoning. Let’s say it this way, honorable father. If you were to go to the Mercenary Union and issue a task to assassinate somebody, would you sign the three characters of Su Zian?” Su Luo raised her eyebrow and smiled faintly at them.**

**This was an error in thinking.**

**The opponent wanted to frame her, therefore had deliberately wrote her name, treating it as proof that she was the criminal.**

**However, they forgot about a normal human heart’s logic. When doing bad things, who would dare to openly write their real name? Let alone when ordering such a nasty task as tarnishing the third Miss Su’s innocence?**

**Su Zian was suddenly stumped by the question.**

**In fact, what Su Luo had said was completely right. If you were to go and do bad things, who would dare to openly write their own name? Who wouldn’t go and do it secretly?**

**Asking himself honestly, if he were to go and issue this type of task, even if he were to die, he would not write down his real name.**

**That being said, Su Luo was actually innocent? Could it be that somebody was trying to frame her?**

**At this moment, Su Zian’s expression became unsettled, suddenly dark or suddenly light, making it impossible to know what he was really thinking.**

**How could the crown prince let Su Luo escape this calamity so easily?**

**One could only see the corner of his mouth lift as he spoke coldly: “Maybe it was because you have nothing to fear, therefore you openly wrote your own name?”**

**Su Luo almost rolled her eyes.**

**Was her IQ that low? Who was dumb enough to do that?**

**Her habit of doing things was to have every step calculated. If she hadn’t planned out everything afterwards, then she wouldn’t take any action. She wasn’t like that stupid Su Wan, with so many flaws that the plan collapsed.**

However, Su Luo did not expect that a few words could clear her reputation so easily.

Those words were capable of swaying Su Zian's heart and had already achieved the desired effect.

“Also——” Su Luo's ancient well-like eyes did not even ripple as she unhurriedly looked around. Finally, her eyes fixed on Mr. Mo, and she coldly and clearly asked, “Mr. Mo, let me ask, that day at the Mercenary Union, was it really me? Did you personally see me?”

Mr. Mo did not expect that Su Luo's ordinary, serene eyes would be so overbearing. Under a gaze of such aggressive strength, he had an irrepressible feeling of guilt.

How could it be like this? Didn't Nanny Zhao say that Su Manor's fourth girl was a good-for-nothing, and was very easy to deal with?

# Chapter 184 – Confrontation at the scene (1)

---

Mr. Mo took a deep breath and pressed down the indescribable fear that arose. He lifted his eyebrows and his deep gaze landed upon Su Luo's body, then lightly said. "The fourth Miss Su, you must not continue to object, it's useless."

"Then, you admit that you personally saw me?" Su Luo shallowly smiled, unblinkingly staring at him.

"The fourth Miss Su, why should you once again court disgrace? That day, if I didn't personally see you, then how would this lowly person dare to testify against you?" Mr. Mo's expression was bitter and grieved.

Su Luo suddenly smiled, her smile was like the Queen of the night that bloomed, so beautifully alluring that it could not be reproduced.

"Then the me that day you spoke about, was I wearing a cloak or just as I am now?" Su Luo smiled faintly and asked him.

She didn't do it, therefore she was not afraid to confront him.

The more thoroughly she probed, then the more flaws the opponent would reveal.

Because made-up evidence, after all, was not really true and simply couldn't bear any scrutiny. This was also one of the reasons why, under thousands of eyes, she was secure in her knowledge since the beginning.

Was she wearing a cloak or as she was now? Mr. Mo hesitated. This detail had never been talked about before.

Mr. Mo's gaze secretly looked towards Nanny Zhao. Nanny Zhao stood behind Madam Su, her expression remained calm, however, almost imperceptibly, she nodded her head slightly.

After Mr. Mo obtained her prompt, he once again put on a proper and righteous expression, “That day, the fourth Miss Su didn’t have any cover on, she came as she is now. She merely requested that this lowly person not spread this matter.”

“Good, let’s just pretend that I, Su Luo, is as stupid as a pig, and doesn’t know to mask her appearance when doing bad things. Also, am careless enough to sign my real name. In that case, I now ask you. On that day when you saw me, was I wearing a jasmine or Chinese peony fragrance?” Su Luo faintly smiled.

Only her pair of profoundly clear eyes which could distinguish between right and wrong, watched Mr. Mo. Those eyes were like an ancient well, without a ripple on the surface, however their vigor could intimidate a person. A person dared not look straight at it.

Jasmine fragrance or Chinese peony fragrance?

This Mr. Mo really did remember, the lady that came on that day seemed to have the jasmine fragrance on her body. That smell did not scatter for a long time, therefore his impression compared to others was rather deep.

However, how should he answer it now? The Chinese peony?

Mr. Mo lifted his eyes and looked at Su Luo’s mocking and ridiculing eyes. All of a sudden, he couldn’t respond.

Even though he was a worldly person who administered things at the Mercenary Union, he didn’t know why. In front of Su Luo, his heart unconsciously seemed to emit a kind of unprecedented panic and dread.

Obviously, this girl was merely a good-for-nothing. But, why was it that every single one of her sentences was hard for him to answer, almost forcing him to spill the beans?

Mr. Mo wiped at the cold sweat on his forehead, unsure how to respond.

At this time, Su Xi angrily glowered at Su Luo and inserted a sentence. “The fourth older sister is really laughable. Just relying on you, how could you even afford to buy rouge powder? Or even wear some fragrance, really laughable!”

These words, coincidentally reminded Mr. Mo. The corner of his mouth evoked

a stiff smile, “This question by the fourth Miss Su, it’s hard for this lowly person to answer. Because after so many days, this lowly person cannot clearly remember whether the fourth Miss was wearing a fragrance.”

Mr. Mo’s reaction was pretty fast, he didn’t fall into his own first trap.

However, he could escape the first question, let’s see how he would escape the second question.

Su Luo indifferently shot a quick glance at Su Xi, and once again cast her eyes upon Mr. Mo’s old face, which was now overflowing with cold sweat.

“What the fifth younger sister said is right. As a concubine’s daughter that couldn’t even afford to buy fragrant powder, how could I have the gold coins to issue a task at the Mercenary Union? Oh, that’s right, Mr. Mo, how many gold coins were spent on that task?” Su Luo’s expression was unperturbed and lacked a single ripple. The corner of her mouth slightly lifted up.

## Chapter 185 - Confrontation at the scene (2)

---

From beginning to end, she had an expression of watching a play with a touch of mockery, as she watched the people around her.

Now the surrounding people's expressions were also not very good. They also followed the logic and came to a sudden realization.

Indeed, seeing the old-fashioned clothing on Su Luo's body and that natural face without any cosmetics. Above, her head appeared to have never worn any jewelry. Looking at her, one could only see a clean face and an impoverished appearance. How could she have enough gold coins to issue a task at the Mercenary Union?

This was impossible, right?

Even His Highness the crown prince started to frown.

Even though he had experienced this loathsome girl's clear eloquence the previous time. However he never expected that she could be clever and collected to such a degree.

At present, everyone at the scene was stronger than her. Regardless of which person was pulled out, that person could easily swat her to death with the palm of a hand.

Under this kind of ambiance, a situation where almost everyone was hostile to her, she could still speak frankly with assurance. She advanced gradually step by step while setting up traps everywhere, calmly and unperturbed, she washed away the injustice against herself.

This kind of Su Luo was really the rumored good-for-nothing?

If this kind of her was a good-for-nothing, then what should this entire group of people that was forced to retreat step by step, and was powerless to resist

her, be called?

His Highness the crown prince's sharp eyebrows lifted slightly. A contemplating expression flashed across his eyes...frankly speaking, he was a little interested in this kind of Su Luo.

Just at this moment, the distinct sounds of footsteps could suddenly be heard coming from outside.

From the doorway, a red-robed, peerless youngster leisurely walked in.

Such a beautiful and handsome young man!

Su Luo sucked in some cold air.

He was dressed in a red brocade robe, his exquisite face was flawless without a trace of blemish. He had a pair of pitch-black, beautifully clear eyes. Above his nose and between his eyebrows, was an exotic beauty mark, making him appear even more mysterious and pretty handsome.

What was even more unusual was that his body gave off a temperament as pure as a child.

He had been smiling since the beginning. Since the time he came in, the corner of his mouth was lifted into a radiant arc that hadn't gone down.

When the crown prince saw this person, his eyebrows wrinkled. A dark color flashed across his eyes as if restraining himself, it seemed he was rather afraid of this person.

When Su Zian saw this youngster, his complexion darkened momentarily, but quickly restored to its original state. Afterwards, he put a smile on his face and went up to welcome this person.

Truly, the biggest change in expression belonged to Mr. Mo, who was overflowing with cold sweat. He looked at the red-robed youngster at the door and his foot slipped. Both of his legs seemed to have gone limp from lack of strength and he directly sank to his knees.

"Didn't know that president Beichen would honor us with his presence. Please excuse me for not going out to greet you and hope you will forgive me, forgive me." Su Zian, wearing a smile, cordially cupped his hands in greeting.

Beichen Ying came from the mysterious Beichen clan. Right now, he was the president of the Mercenary Union in the Eastern Ling Empire.

He always had a smiling appearance.

Of course, the fiercer he was when killing people, the more gorgeous his smile became.

The only people who were aware of this habit of his was not his closest brothers, but the countless corpses that had died with their eyes wide open.

Beichen Ying had both hands behind his back and calmly stood within the main hall. After looking around once, he faintly smiled while casting a glance at Su Zian and nodded his head slightly, "General Su, no need to be so polite, ha ha, your luck is really pretty good! You gave birth to a great daughter, in the future, you will achieve meteoric success. Your future prospects are beyond measure, congratulations, congratulations."

Once he finished speaking, Beichen Ying very optimistically clapped Su Zian's shoulder.

This was the posture of a superior to a subordinate.

In the Empire, the president of the Mercenary Union and the Great General that protected the country was of the same rank, there wasn't one was of a higher or lower rank, so to speak.

However, due to Beichen Ying's family background, his status was a lot higher. Even though Su Zian's heart was unsatisfied, he still would not dare to resist.

Because the Beichen family was really mysterious, was extremely high in status, too high to reach....This last name, once it appeared was an existence that made people despair.

## Chapter 186 – Confrontation at the scene (3)

---

Su Zian thought that Beichen Ying was referring to the crown prince and Su Xi's matter. A smile appeared on his solemn and cold face: "Indeed, I'm indebted to His Highness the crown prince's undeserving kindness, this really is Xi'er's fortune."

Who knew that Beichen Ying would frown, he was used to speaking directly and annoyedly said, "What does this have to do with the crown prince?"

"Huh?" Su Zian stared blankly at him.

Before, he had said he would achieve meteoric success, could it be that he was not referring to the crown prince and Su Xi's matter? Then...what could it be?

Beichen Ying placatingly clapped Su Zian's shoulder: "The number one person in the capital, did you forget who it is?"

"Jin, His Highness Prince Jin?" Su Zian subconsciously blurted it out. His speech even began to stammer.

But after speaking this sentence, he immediately felt that something was not quite right. Because in this great hall, the person seated at the highest position was His Highness the crown prince...

The crown prince had always been secretly competing with His Highness Prince Jin. Although everyone knew that every quality he had couldn't be compared to His Highness Prince Jin, nobody dared to say this to his face.

For a moment, Su Zian saw His Highness crown prince's complexion turn dark in an instant, his regret made his intestines turn green.

Madam Su saw that the atmosphere was amiss, and she hurriedly stepped out to resolve the embarrassment. She smiled in a sweet-tempered manner and softly spoke, "The Venerable Beichen Ying really likes to crack jokes. His Highness

Prince Jin and our Su Manor never had any dealings. Don't know which family's good news you are congratulating about?"

His Highness Prince Jin was placed on a pedestal, he was like an exiled immortal from the nine layers of heaven. Ordinary people could only profane him.

Su Manor always had a clear view of things and knew it was hard to become his Highness Prince Jin's follower. Therefore in this world, they could only follow in His Highness the crown prince's footsteps.

With just this one sentence by Madam Su, she clearly stated that there was no relationship between Su Manor and His Highness Prince Jin.

Also because of this, His Highness the crown prince's complexion, which was as black as the bottom of a pot, gradually started to recover. Even though it was still stiff, but it was not as ruthless as before.

However, it seemed as if Beichen Ying had enmity towards His Highness the crown prince.

From the time he entered until now, he didn't even bother to say hello to the crown prince. He completely took the empire's crown prince as invisible. Considering Beichen Ying's mysterious and terrifying family background, His Highness the crown prince could only suffer this humiliation and swallow it.

Beichen Ying faintly smiled and cast a quick glance at the crown prince. He turned his head towards Su Zian and smiled, "The Great General Su, Madam Su, your news is really lacking. Could it be that you don't know His Highness Prince Jin, towards a Miss in your family..."

His gaze swept around, seeing everyone's interest and attention was hooked by him. It seemed as if Beichen Ying had let something slip, and giving a few 'hey hey' dry laughing sounds, "Chuckle, chuckle, chuckle, cannot say, cannot say... The mysteries of the heavens must not be revealed."

Even though he stopped the conversation in time, however, the first half of the sentence was obviously enough of a hint.

His Highness Prince Jin towards a Miss in your family...in addition to Beichen Ying's congratulating left and right. What did this signify? Surely even an idiot

hearing it could understand.

Could it really be true? Su Zian and Madam Su's heart momentarily rose to their throat.

If His Highness Prince Jin really fell in love with their daughter, how great a fortune was that? Capable of enticing his Highness Prince Jin, for Su Manor it was simply like reaching heaven in a single bound!

Suddenly— —

Su Zian became excited.

Madam Su also became excited.

Consequently, both of their eyes simultaneously landed on Su Qing standing at the side.

The second Miss from the Su family was born from the first wife, her status was honorable and she was absolutely beautiful to look at. Even more hard to come by was that she was amazingly gifted. Her cultivation speed in the entire Eastern Ling Empire's younger generation was among the top five.

What was more, Su Qing was a disciple of Grandmaster Lan Hai.

## Chapter 187 – Confrontation at the scene (4)

---

In the capacity of protecting the Empire's laws, Grandmaster Lan Hai enjoyed great rights to speak in front of His Majesty the emperor. His Majesty would look for Grandmaster Lan Hai to consult on many things. This hard to come by opportunity could be from Grandmaster Lan Hai playing the matchmaker from within.

Based on the above mentioned statements, if His Highness Prince Jin really fancied a Su family Miss, then it could be none other than Su Qing.

As a result, Su Zian and Madam Su's pair of eyes concentrated on Su Qing's face. Their expression was complex, there was hope, with expectation and longing mixed in, simply not even trying to conceal it.

With Su Zian and Madam Su leading, everyone followed their gaze to look at Su Qing...

Was it her? It should be her right? If it was real, then from among the Su family's few Misses, the one worthy was none other than the second Miss Su. Heavens, this was none other than His Highness Prince Jin!

Now Su Qing, under the many pairs of radiant and glittering watchful gazes, her normally cold, proud and aloof pair of eyes dropped down slightly. On her white as jade complexion appeared a distinctly visible scarlet blush.

She could feel that both of her own cheeks were boiling hot, but her eyelids could not conceal her happy expression.

His Highness Prince Jin...Recalling that perfect, immortal-like male, hearing that he had fallen in love with her, Su Qing felt as though she was about to suffocate. She was so nervous that she forgot how she should arrange her hands and feet.

"You, why are all of you looking at me this way!" Su Qing originally thought to

utter an angry rebuke but her voice unexpectedly carried a touch of happiness that she was unable to conceal.

“Qing’er, you....you and His Highness Prince Jin...” Su Zian rubbed his hands, he nervously and expectantly asked.

“All of you...are too hateful, I’m going to ignore all of you!” Su Qing shyly lifted her skirt and rapidly ran out.

She never thought, a glimpse of her graceful figure at Fei Du bridge would make His Highness Prince Jin continue to think about her and never forget. On the first day she came back, he would send someone in his place to announce this... this, this was simply too shameful!

While Su Qing was running, her heart was as sweet as honey, the corner of her mouth perked up, no matter what, she couldn’t turn the arc down.

With Su Qing running out, this only confirmed her and His Highness Prince Jin’s not-so-innocent relationship.

However, Su Zian and Madam Su looked favorably on this. They also could not conceal the smiling expression from the corner of their eyes.

Only His Highness the crown prince’s complexion darkened again in such a short time!

His solemn and cold gaze swept towards Su Zian. Su Zian’s complexion immediately became stiff and he forcefully masked the joy on his face.

Certainly, the people with a change in their complexion at the scene were not only these individuals.

Among them, the main focus that needed to be mentioned was the Venerable president of the Mercenary Union.

He dumbfoundedly watched Su Qing shyly lifting her skirt to flee, and with the same blank expression, watched Su Zian and Madam Su’s repeatedly cheerful expression...His forehead wrinkled and an annoyed expression appeared on his face.

It seemed like he... with a good heart had done a bad deed, what should be done?

What was Su Qing doing? This didn't have anything to do with her. Why would she shyly run away? It was very easy for people to misunderstand, okay?

Now with her running away, it would only confirm that between her and Nangong Liuyun, there was an ambiguous relationship?

Then, then...Beichen Ying apprehensively, nervously, quietly and furtively shot a glance at Su Luo.

He was guilty, ahhh, and really didn't have the courage to look at her expression.

However...

How could it be?

Beichen Ying now discovered that Su Luo appeared to not be affected at all by this matter.

She stood there indifferently, with an expression that was light like the wind. The corner of her mouth formed a shallow smile. Her pitch-black, ancient well-like eyes were rippleless, their depth was undetectable.

Seeing this with his quick glance, Beichen Ying was even more remorseful. He- He really had a cheap mouth ah. This time, he would never be able to explain this clearly.

# Chapter 188 – Confrontation at the scene (5)

---

Based on his many years of rolling around among crowds of women, his experience told him that Su Luo was the unperturbed type of Miss, the more her heart cared, the calmer her expression.

This was the same as him, when he killed people, the more excited he was, the more brilliant the smile that would appear.

Seeing Su Luo unruffled and maintaining a cool-headed complexion, Beichen Ying tried to console his little heart while grieving for the thousandth time.

Finished, finished, finished... She was definitely mad, she would definitely let her anger loose on Nangong Liuyun's body. Nangong Liuyun would transfer any suffering onto his own body.

Now Beichen Ying became so depressed that he wanted to run into a wall.

Su Luo inadvertently saw this Venerable Beichen's suddenly bright then gloomy expression, changing like a mix of colors. Inevitably, she became somewhat baffled.

Beichen Ying discovered that Su Luo was staring fixedly at himself. He secretly winked at her, his eyes seemed to say: Sister-in-law, a misunderstanding, it was purely a misunderstanding! In Nangong Liuyun's heart, apart from you, there is no one else! You must, by all means, not misunderstand this!!!

However, not everyone could form a mutual understanding with him.

Su Luo saw both of his eyes full of watery light, winking at her non-stop. In her heart, she secretly muttered: could this Venerable Beichen have an eye twitch problem? Or perhaps his brain was convulsing?

Seeing Su Luo caught up in contemplation, Beichen Ying thought that she understood his meaning. He thought she was pondering if she should forgive

Nangong Liuyun about this matter. Consequently, he once again winked towards Su Luo. His eyes were saying: Sister-in-law! It was all this little cheap mouth's fault. You mustn't provoke Nangong Liuyun, if you provoke him, then he would oppress us, ahhhhhhhhhh~::~

Su Luo saw Venerable Beichen's pair of eyes once again wink at her. No matter what, it wouldn't stop. Inevitably, her face was full of sympathy; such a beautiful face, why was it ruined by those pair of eyes? It was really a shame.

If Beichen Ying was capable of hearing Su Luo's mind, in all likelihood, he would have spit out blood from anger.

As a result, so to speak, casting amorous glances and whatnot when running into an unreliable person, it really could make a person vomit blood.

In fact, today's general assembly to interrogate Su Luo was really unsuccessful.

It was first interrupted by His Highness the crown prince, subsequently, Beichen Ying also inserted in another thick pole. An originally proper interrogation was halted again and again, deliberately complicating the issue.

However, Beichen Ying didn't come today because he had nothing to do and was out for a stroll. He was here under someone's order to help Su Luo, he was going to give biased help.

He did not wait for Su Zian to invite him to sit. He just coolly and collectedly sat down. He happily and contentedly sat on Su Zian's seat.

His movement was so smooth and confident, it was as if that seat originally belonged to him.

This Beichen Ying, relying upon being from the Beichen family, his arrogance was greater than even the crown prince's!

One only saw him reclining upon the red sandalwood chair, both legs sticking up, carelessly waving his hand and with all smiles, changed the conversation back to the initial topic: "General Su, let's stop gossiping. Weren't you investigating a case just now? Please continue, it just so happens that this lord could also listen in."

Su Zian's heart was very angry, but he dared not let it show on his face. He

inwardly endured this and his face only displayed a smiling expression, “This matter, let’s just end it here...”

“How can this be okay? This won’t do, it must be investigated. Moreover, it must be investigated thoroughly!” Beichen Ying did not agree.

He came burdened with the boss’s order, if he returned without any achievement, then where could he place his own face?

“This....” Su Zian thought about it, and his heart inevitably became somewhat upset.

This matter, so many people inside the main hall now knew, even if he wanted to cover it up, he couldn’t keep it in the dark. Now, with regards to this matter, he could only fasten all the criminal charges on Su Luo’s head. Finally, he would step out and act righteously to punish her if justice demanded it. Perhaps then, he could still redeem some of his face back.

## Chapter 189 – Confrontation at the scene (6)

---

Thinking of this, Su Zian restrained himself, glared at Su Luo and sternly said: “Even as the matter stands now, you still dare to argue. Come, drag her out of here!”

The corner of Su Luo’s mouth lifted into an almost non-existent sneer.

She could clearly see that Su Zian had flown into a rage out of humiliation. He wanted to use her as a sacrificial lamb to settle this matter. So much so that he wouldn’t even give her a final chance to defend herself.

This kind of father was simply too vile.

This type of official residence, even smelling the air made her nauseous.

If it weren’t for her need to secretly investigate her background in Su Manor, she would have already waved her sleeves and left this wolf’s lair earlier.

However before Su Luo could speak, Beichen Ying’s brows knotted. He waved his hand, “Wait a moment!”

You could have made a move against anyone else, but to touch the person at the bottom of Nangong’s heart, you must not want to live, right?!

Beichen Ying turned his head to Su Zian, and frowning, said: “The Great General Su, this is where you are wrong. Just now, the fourth Miss Su plainly said that she doesn’t have any gold. Then how could she go to the Mercenary Union to issue a task? Pertaining to this point, you still haven’t clarified it yet. Then how could you directly just add these charges onto her body? This seems rather too arbitrary! Don’t tell me General Su normally investigates cases in the military in this way?”

It was okay when Beichen Ying didn’t speak but once he spoke, he stupefied Su Zian.

Now, even though he had a faint smiling expression on his face, but everyone could see that this Venerable president of the Mercenary Union was unhappy.

The accusation Beichen Ying slammed down was really too big. If it stuck, then the accusation could cost him his noble title and official job. How could Su Zian dare to take on this charge?

He could only wipe away the cold sweat on his forehead and hurriedly stretched his smile even wider. Forcing a laugh, he responded, "The Venerable Beichen is joking. This is merely a small matter within my own family, therefore..."

Yet, it seemed as if Beichen Ying wanted to argue strongly with him. One could only see him coldly raise his eyebrow, "Such a minor family matter and you can't even try the case clearly. Then what qualification do you have to be in charge of the empire's military forces? General Su, wouldn't you say I'm right?"

A thread of rage flashed through Su Zian's eyes!

Everyone should be at the same ranking position, if it weren't for me giving the Beichen family some face, then I, your daddy would have already not paid any f\*cking attention to you. Now you have actually dared to come and lecture such a venerable man like me!

However, these were merely Su Zian's mental thoughts. His appearance only had a smile that was more good-natured than anyone else's. He continuously nodded his head: "Yes, yes, yes, what the venerable Beichen said is right."

With that said, Beichen Ying then let him go. He turned his head around and smiled at Su Luo, as if currying for a favor from her, and said: "The fourth Miss Su, now you can defend yourself to right the wrongs. You should rest assured, you only need to say it and nobody inside this hall would dare to bully you. "

Without waiting for Su Luo to respond, His Highness the crown prince displayed his displeasure first. He coldly smiled, letting out a few 'hum, hum' sounds, "Venerable Beichen should not be so partial."

Beichen Ying had a self-satisfied smile and waved his hand uncaringly: "Be at

ease, this official never uses public office to avenge private wrongs. I also never rely on my strength to mistreat the weak, and I never bully frail women. Presumably, His Highness the crown prince would also not do such senseless things right?”

These three separate ‘never’s...were very clearly the sentences Su Luo had used to set up the crown prince that day when he came to Su Manor to break off the engagement.

These three ‘never’ sentences didn’t matter much, but that final sentence left unsaid...that ‘not raise up’ phrase was the true meaning of Beichen Ying’s words.

“Humph!” His Highness the crown prince was jabbed right at the center of his matter with Su Luo. He resentfully glared at Su Luo, then coldly snorted and turned his face away.

It was all this loathsome girl’s fault, causing him to become the laughingstock of his opponent! He absolutely would not let her off so easily!

He had never gotten along with Prince Jin, whereas Beichen Ying was Prince Jin’s number one henchman. Both of them had already strived against each other for a long time, merely bickering over differing opinions. How could the conceited status of the crown prince be the thick-skinned Beichen Ying’s opponent? Consequently, every time they crossed swords, the crown prince could only glare at him.

## Chapter 190 – Confrontation at the scene (7)

---

Su Luo shot a considering glance at Beichen Ying. By directly relying on her perception, she could tell that Beichen Ying, this person, would be all smiles towards anyone. However his smile never reached his eyes, sometimes he seemed like a profoundly mysterious old fox.

However he didn't seem to have any evil intent towards herself, instead he seemed to be interested in helping her? Why was this?

Though, if she didn't take the small advantages, then she was a damn fool. Su Luo would never let such a good opportunity slip by.

One could only see Su Luo salute towards Beichen Ying and lightly smile: "Venerable Beichen, do you feel that the way I am dressed, is that of a person who can afford to issue a task?"

Beichen Ying very tactfully played along. He stroked his chin and looked at Su Luo from top to bottom, shaking his head and said: "I have seen that task, it costs three thousand gold coins. To sell, even ten times of the you right now would still not cover the price."

Naturally, it also depended on who dared to buy her....Beichen Ying could pat his chest and pledge. Whoever dared to buy Su Luo, he guaranteed that person would encounter the calamity of having their entire family exterminated in less than a quarter of an hour.

Nobody had noticed, but Beichen Ying would only use the word 'I' to refer to himself in front of Su Luo, whereas in front of everyone else, he would refer to himself as 'this lord'.

Both person echoed one another, it seemed that they were about to wash clean the charges against Su Luo.

Now, Su Jingyu interrupted and said, “Humph, god knows if she is pretending to be poor in front of people? In my opinion, it’s better to go to that courtyard and search around. Maybe a pile of gold coins could be hidden within that room!”

It turns out, it turns out that the pile of gold coin of unknown origin from that day was to be used for this. Su Luo repeatedly sneered in her heart.

However on the surface, Su Luo did not bat an eye and looked at him. A hard to perceive thread of alarm flashed across her eyes: “With no cause or reason, and you want to search my courtyard? Humph! What kind of reasoning is this!”

It was quite clear, the fear in Su Luo’s eyes from losing her head and the feigned calm on her face allowed Su Jingyu to catch it just in time at the end. One could see him laugh nastily and say: “Since you said you are innocent, why would you be afraid of everyone searching? Humph! Your courtyard evidently had hidden money of unidentifiable origins!”

“One can always trump up a charge against someone!” Su Luo argued for what was right. However her body appeared to tremble slightly from fear.

Su Jingyu was even more pleased with himself. He solemnly saluted towards Su Zian and raised his head to sternly say: “The honorable father, since Su Luo won’t confess even if she were to die, so now, the only method is to search her courtyard! To demand a search or not, will ask Father to make a decision!”

The crown prince suddenly stood up and indolently said: “Having sat for so long, going out for a walk is also pretty good.”

This was to express his consent.

Su Zian once again looked at Beichen Ying. Who knew that Beichen Ying who always made it his business to oppose the crown prince would also stretch his body: “Since the crown prince wants to take a walk, then this official would accompany on this walk. “

Both Lordly persons had spoken, how could Su Zian have the status to still refuse?

His dark and fierce gaze stared at Su Luo. He frostily said. “Good, now we will go search! Once the result of the search has come out, afterwards let’s see how

you would argue!”

“Wait——” Su Luo shouted and halted the crowd of nobility preparing to take a step out, and sneeringly asked: “If you searched the stuff, then what? If you can’t find anything, then what?!”

Want to search for gold? Ouch, she truly found it embarrassing to say. Those gold, this lady had already dug out. However, it was all piled up in this lady’s space. Even if you wanted to search, dream on?!

Momentarily, everyone’s gaze focused upon Su Zian’s face.

Su Zian pondered for a short while, his expression was frosty and he sternly said, “If we search and find it, then from now on your name Su Luo would be removed from the Su family. If we find nothing in the search, then...”

# Chapter 191 – Unexpected surprise (1)

---

“If the search doesn’t produce any results, then all the Su family members present will pour tea and apologize to me! Nobody is allowed to renege!” Su Luo’s beautiful pitch-black eyes swept everyone around her. Her eyes were filled with a faint taunting overtone.

Su Zian’s footsteps stopped. He never imagined that Su Luo would raise such a disrespectful condition. He wanted to refute it immediately.

However, Beichen Ying only faintly smiled and slanted a quick glance towards Su Zian, then smilingly said: “What the fourth Miss Su said is correct. How can a young lady’s bedchamber be a place where anybody that wanted to could enter? On top of that, how can it also be a place where anyone who wanted to can enter and perform a search whenever they wanted? If it were allowed, then doesn’t the law exist anymore? The Great General Su, how do you feel?”

Beichen Ying gave off a careless appearance, but his entire body issued out a powerful pressure that bore down on Su Zian, making his heart palpitate. The corner of Su Zian’s mouth stiffened and was pulled into a smile. “What the Venerable Beichen said is absolutely right.”

He slanted his head towards Su Luo and with a cold smile said: “Fine! We’ll do it according to what you said. If our search does not find anything, the Su family members present will all pour you tea and apologize! Furthermore, you will be paid ten thousand gold coins in compensation! Now, do you still have something you are not at ease about?”

There could be a ten thousand gold coins gain? Then it really couldn’t be better.

Su Luo expressed her satisfaction with the result of this negotiation. “Having

both the Venerable Beichen and His Highness the Crown Prince to bear witness, Su Luo feels assured.”

The implication was that in regards to her cheap father, she didn't feel assured.

This sentence infuriated Su Zian to the point that his complexion became ashen, but he didn't dare to let his face flare up with rage. He ferociously threw his sleeves and took large strides to leave the room.

A delegation of people arrived at Su Luo's courtyard on the far side.

Beichen Ying glanced at the battered low wall with lime falling off from the top of it. The bare wall exposed the shabby yellow mud inside. Furthermore, the customary door at the entrance of the courtyard unexpectedly did not exist!

With a smile at the corner of his mouth, Beichen Ying pointed at the courtyard and said: “The Great General Su, I never would have thought that your home manor would have such a shabby courtyard. Do you keep it as an antique to provide a place for people to tour?”

Su Zian's stern eyebrows knotted, a trace of blush from shame flashed across his ashen face. He smothered a humph sound. “The Venerable Beichen truly loves to crack jokes.”

Beichen Ying's pair of storm tossed watery eyes feigned a serious expression. “Oh? Don't tell me...people can actually live here?”

Su Zian's face revealed an embarrassed color. He masked his discomfort by using his fist to cover the edge of his lip and coughed a few times. “We are here.”

Beichen Ying had a flabbergasted expression when looking back at Su Zian. A pair of beautiful eyes were opened wide. With an incredulous expression, Beichen Ying pointed at the courtyard. “This...the fourth Miss Su actually lives here? This can't be true, right?”

No one could deny that Beichen Ying had a very great gift for acting. He had a blend of shock, surprise, and disbelief on his face. In contrast, Su Zian displayed the most awkward countenance.

Su Zian distinctly coughed once and avoided Beichen Ying's topic as it caused him some embarrassment. He lifted his robe and took the lead to walk into the courtyard.

His actions were already quite obvious. It was clear that if he wasn't heedful of Beichen Ying's powerful family, he would have fallen out with Beichen Ying on the spot.

However, just who was this Beichen Ying? He had a reputation in the capital of being the number one hedonistic son of rich parents. How could he be made to leave so easily?

Moreover, in order to redeem his mistake made inside the hall previously, he naturally must properly taunt Su Zian well for a turn. He had to allow a certain stingy man's sharp heart's beloved young lady to vent her anger.

Consequently, everyone could only look on as Beichen Ying intentionally stood by Su Zian's side. His beautiful eyes evaluated the circumstances within the courtyard in every direction. He repeatedly shook his head and sighed. "This is really such a huge shock. It really is too hard to believe. It is extremely hard to imagine. This is just too, too, too extremely insulting. Such a famous and stately aristocratic family. Such a stately Great General's manor. To go as far as allowing one's own daughter to live in this kind of house that would collapse from one blow of wind. This simply, simply is....maltreatment. Yes, this is maltreatment!"

When Su Zian heard what was said, he felt the veins on his forehead burst out throbbing.

## Chapter 192 – Unexpected surprise (2)

---

The hands at the side of his body clenched into fists.

What he really wanted to do now was to flatten Beichen Ying with one punch!

How could there be this kind of person! Being a guest at another person's home and not saying anything pleasant to hear, only picking out the most offensive things to say.

The pitiful Su Zian didn't know, now the most august person in his eyes, the Venerable Beichen's, number one goal was to curry favor with Su Luo. Ridiculing Su Zian was the best method to curry favor with Su Luo. As a result, the pitiful Su Zian was destined for a tragic end.

One could only see Beichen Ying with both of his hands behind his back, unhurriedly strolling around within the courtyard. While walking, he was also shaking his head and had his long, slim forefinger pointed at Su Zian, gesturing. His face had a dissatisfied expression: "General Su, it's not that this lord wants to chide you. You ah, this heart is too prejudiced. So partial that there doesn't seem to be a limit."

Su Zian's expression became increasingly black, like that of the bottom of a pot.

His breathing became heavy and coarse, then was stretched out for longer. It was obvious that he was doing his utmost to suppress the rage.

An annoyed mood appeared in Madam Su's heart, but she also knew that Beichen Ying was not someone she could offend. Therefore, with her sweet-tempered and gentle smile, she softly said: "Venerable Beichen shouldn't say it this way, Luo'er living here, it was really because there was no alternative due to difficulties."

“Having no alternative due to difficulties? Living here?” Beichen Ying’s smile seemed to contain a deep meaning to expose the truth, “Madam Su, what kind of difficulties existed that gave you no alternative?”

“This...” Madam Su had just carelessly said some nonsense, where could such difficulties exist? Why would she have thought that Beichen Ying could win an inch and unexpectedly wanted a foot? Momentarily, she stared blankly back at him.

Beichen Ying suddenly gave a smile of having clearly understood. He shook his head and sighed: “Alas, Madam Su. In fact, everyone is able to comprehend, after all, the fourth Miss Su was not birthed by you. You dispatched her to this place where people wouldn’t live, letting her to emerge or perish on her own. This is also pardonable——”

The content of his words, immediately made the smile at the corner of Madam Su’s mouth became rigid. It no longer allowed her to smile.

Madam Su’s hands, hidden in her sleeves, clenched into fists. Biting her teeth, she squeezed out an extremely stiff smile: “Venerable Beichen....”

“Madam Su, you really don’t need to explain. After all, there is a difference between the first wife and the concubines, right? Everyone understands.” Seeing Madam Su’s expression was the same shade of black as the Great General Su’s, Beichen Ying once again added another sentence: “However, don’t blame this lord for chiding you. No matter how your heart may be unwilling, on the surface, shouldn’t you make it look a little better? Now you even disdain to make efforts on the surface, fancy that the Emperor actually bestowed you the title of first-rate traditional wife. Tsk, tsk, tsk.”

Only Beichen Ying dared to speak so unrestrainedly, if he was replaced by any other person, the Great General Su would have already commanded people to beat him to death with wooden boards!

Now, the Great General Su and Madam Su were both not lightly angered. Both of them did their utmost to endure it so they wouldn’t explode. However, they were very close exploding, only lacking the last straw.

Su Luo’s heart was secretly curious, where was this divine being Beichen Ying from? His words were without the slightest scruples, yet Su Zian and Madam Su

unexpectedly didn't flare up?

However, what made Su Luo feel even more baffled was that this person, in all respects, unexpectedly supported her. Every word and every sentence was used to fight for justice on her behalf. Why would he do this?

Moreover, when he had finished ridiculing Su Zian and Madam Su, afterwards he would often make eyes towards her. A cute appearance and one of taking credit for his own achievement, making people simply being unable to help but laugh.

Who was this person? Had she meet him before? Su Luo touched her chin and sank into contemplation.

The crown prince swept a quick glance at Su Zian and Madam Su. He also glared at Beichen Ying, with displeasure, he brushed at his sleeves and said: "Only you could be this long-winded. say a few sentences less, no one would think you were mute."

## Chapter 193 – Unexpected surprise (3)

---

Beichen Ying's favorite hobby in life had always been to pick fights with the crown prince. Since the crown prince took the initiative to provoke him, if he didn't counter-attack, then wouldn't he be losing face?

The corner of Beichen Ying's mouth rose into a careless smile, his liquid eyes flickered with a mocking overtone: "His Highness the crown prince is not long-winded, but you only do things and not speak of them, having done all kinds of misdeeds to exhaustion. You should take care that after you birth a son, nothing would happen to him."

"You court death!" The crown prince did not speak but the imperial bodyguard at his side pulled out his long sword and thrust towards Beichen Ying.

However, before that imperial bodyguard could get close to Beichen Ying, a black-clothed person flashed out from behind Beichen Ying. Both of his fingers were like iron clamps, pinching towards the throat of that imperial bodyguard.

In merely a split second, that imperial bodyguard's body folded onto the ground. Both of his eyes were tightly closed, his body was stiff, forever unable to wake up.

The black-clothed man noiselessly withdrew to behind Beichen Ying's back, so faint as if he didn't exist.

Killing a person without a trace, killing a person as if it was nothing...killing a person without regard for life and without any scruples, unrestrained, uninhibited!

Beichen Ying smiled with great sincerity and kind-heartedly. His manner was so happy and content, as if the person on the ground was just sleeping, not that he had lost his life.

His Highness the crown prince was so angry that his face became red. However, he was self-aware. Even adding all the people behind him together was not enough to kill the black-clothed man.

Also, Beichen Ying's methods were very ruthless, he really would kill every one of the crown prince's subordinates without any qualms.

Su Zian hurriedly came to smooth things over. He said a lot of words and was finally able to get the crown prince to step down while getting back a little of his face.

Su Luo's gaze landed on Beichen Ying's body. At this moment, she started to become a little interested in this sunny youngster, whose red-robed body seemed to be possessed by the devil. She was very curious about what kind of stuff he would do next to stupefy everyone.

"Venerable Beichen,, since we are here to search, then can we start now?" Su Zian indifferently asked.

He repeatedly had to lower his face, even if Su Zian wanted to curry favor with Beichen Ying, it was also hard for his heart to take it.

A smile appeared on Beichen Ying's handsome face which was white as jade. His smile had a tint of mystery within. He was only seen opening his sleeves widely and carelessly saying: "This is the General's manor, when to start the search, naturally General Su has the final say. Why would you come and ask this lord?"

Su Zian was almost infuriated to the point of falling flat on his face.

What kind of person was this! Since he entered Su Manor and until now, when did he act like a guest? Now contrary to expectations, he considered himself to be a guest!

Su Zian's heart was very angry, but a smile appeared on his face: "Then since it's like this, let's start now." So that he could make this murderous star leave at the earliest time and have Su Manor's peace be restored earlier.

Under Su Zian's command, a group of grandiose soldiers charged into that dilapidated courtyard.

The corner of Madam Su's mouth lifted into a sneer that was seemingly not there.

Today she had suffered quite a bit of anger, but if she could eliminate Su Luo in one stroke, why should she care about this little bit of anger?

There were about thirty soldiers that went in. They thoroughly searched Su Luo's stuff in her room. They even dug out the corner wall, however—— Very quickly, all the soldiers came out. Headed by that captain Zhao whose complexion was evidently, at a glance, not so good. With a few steps, he arrived in front of Su Zian. The corner of his eyes however, made contact with Madam Su's eyes. He shook his head slightly, almost indiscernible to others.

Madam Su's complexion immediately became ugly!

Su Zian didn't notice Captain Zhao and Madam Su's dialogue. His bearing was imposing, and in a cold voice, he said: "Did you find anything from the search?"

Even though Captain Zhao was reluctant to say it, nevertheless he still shook his head: "Reporting back to the Great General, there are no gold coins in the room."

"Then are there any valuable treasures?" Madam Su inserted a sentence.

## Chapter 194 – Unexpected surprise (4)

---

“Nothing.” Captain Zhao’s heart was somewhat sympathetic to Su Luo. Within that broken-down home, all the valuable items added together were not worth even ten taels of silver. This was still one of the Great General’s Miss ah.

Madam Su’s expression became ugly, how could it be like this!

Plainly...Madam Su shot a glance at the maid Jian Mei who stood behind her. The frosty rays bursting from those eyes made Jian Mei shiver from the cold.

“Madam...”

Jian Mei was just about to explain, but she only heard Madam Su lowering her voice to admonish her: “Shut up!”

Here, there were many people with high martial arts cultivation that Jian Mei might not have discovered. No matter how much she lowered her voice, she still couldn’t guarantee that someone couldn’t overhear...Especially that Venerable Beichen Ying, who was enigmatic but full of enmity towards Su Manor.

Madam Su sent her gaze towards Beichen Ying, unexpectedly at this moment, Beichen Ying just so happened to look at her

His beautiful pitch-black eyes were like ink, as clear as a spring the, water so clear you could see all the way through to the bottom. Now, inside that pair of liquid eyes contained a barely concealed deliberate ridicule.

Madam Su’s heart was abruptly shocked!

The deep anticipation in his eyes....what was the meaning?

Such a clear and bright pair of eyes, like a sharp sword that could pierce through the secrets in the deepest abyss of a person’s heart.

This was the first time that Madam Su had an unfathomable, mysterious gut

feeling of terror, that started at the soles of her feet and slowly crawled up.

Su Zian's expression was somewhat indeterminately switching from overcast to clear. At this moment, he was repeatedly repenting. He regretted listening to Su Jingyu's words and coming to search Su Luo's courtyard.

Now that there was nothing here, it made it seem as though he had been very ferociously slapped in the face.

If it was any other normal day then fine, but presently, the Venerable Beichen Ying was here and it also seemed as if he was here for revenge. He grabbed onto every trivial matter and wouldn't let go, every single time embarrassing him...At this point of time, Su Zian was suffering bitterly and could not speak out.

Perhaps even the Heavens also could not stand by and watch idly.

All of a sudden, among the soldiers searching in the courtyard, one of them let out a slightly surprised sound.

"What happened?" Su Zian could not bear the taunting expression Beichen Ying cast upon his body and quickly walked over there.

"Reporting back to the General, there seems to be something odd under here!" That round-faced soldier pointed at the ground and responded full of certainty.

Su Zian looked at the ground, then looked again at that huge locust tree, a touch of pleasant surprise appeared in his eyes.

About a hundred years ago during that war and the chaos in the capital, Elder Su had ordered some gold to be buried in the ground, to guard against the unexpected. He prepared it for use in times of need. After the war and chaos ended, the gold was dug out in succession, inevitably, some might have been overlooked. .

The huge locust tree?

Yes, that's right! In that same year, it was marked by a locust tree!

Could it be...there really was gold buried under here?

Su Zian immediately became excited. He waved his large hand and loudly commanded: "Dig!"

Consequently, a group of soldiers brandished shovels and iron picks started digging around that several hundreds of years old locust tree

Very quickly, this event made Su Zian extremely excited.

That round-faced soldier could only be seen loudly yelling out: "Something is here! There is something under here!"

"Take it out! Quickly take it out!" Su Zian loudly said.

Yet now, a trace of worry appeared on Madam Su's face. She didn't know why, she seemed to have a premonition that did not bode well. She had the nagging feeling that something odd was going on.

Because according to Jian Mei's report, at that time, Su Luo had moved all the gold coins into her room, so there should not be any gold coins left in this hole.

Therefore, Madam Su tried to secretly stop this and said: "General, this...it's better to use caution before bringing it up."

Su Zian waved his large hand and pushed Madam Su away: "What could happen? You are too soft-hearted!"

## Chapter 195 – Unexpected surprise (5)

---

In fact, Su Zian was somewhat angry with Madam Su. There was one point that Beichen Ying had mentioned that was correct. Everything about the Madam was great, except that her heart was too biased. She actually made Su Luo live in such a dilapidated courtyard for so many years. No matter how much you may not like it, she was still his, Su Zian's, daughter!

Su Zian had never once doubted his own first wife, but now in his heart, for the first time, a crack appeared in his trust towards Madam Su.

Once the seed of doubt was planted, as for when it would grow roots and germinate, would depend on how the bystanders watered and fertilized it. It was also very evident that Su Luo was an expert at this line of work.

She observed Su Zian's and Madam Su's interaction. Her eyes narrowed and a contemplative smile appeared in their depths.

“General! We have dug something out!”

“Quickly bring it up!” Su Zian stood at the side of the hole, his eyes, revealing his deep worry, stared attentively at the bottom of the pit.

This was a major event related to his face, he could not be sloppy.

However, when he saw that small box made of red sandalwood and lined with brocade, a thread of misgiving flashed across his eyes.

He had only heard that back then Elder Su buried gold, he had never heard of him having buried some precious stones...

When Madam Su saw that brocade lined small box, a trace of unease appeared in her eyes...This brocade small box was definitely not the one she had commanded people to bury. In the end, what odd thing was in it?

In fact, a look of astonishment also flashed across Su Luo's face.

**It was very obvious that this matter was also outside of her expectations.**

**Yes, after she had guessed Madam Su's intentions, she actually did bury a few things again. However she did not use this particular brocade small box, evidently the stuff she buried had been switched with something else.**

**In the end, who was it that had done this? What stratagem did the opponent use? Who was supposed to be drawn in?**

**Su Luo narrowed her eyes dangerously, even though her heart had layers of doubt, her face remained calm and collected, as unperturbed as before.**

**Beichen Ying saw Su Luo's behavior, and an appreciative expression appeared in his black eyes.**

**All of a sudden, Su Luo's black, ancient well-like eyes, with their unperturbed surface, shot a penetrating glance at Beichen Ying. Her gaze met his head on in midair, scaring Beichen Ying into skipping a step.**

**However, Beichen Ying's manner very quickly returned. He smiled towards Su Luo with a few 'hey, hey' laughs. His smile held the meaning of taking credit for an achievement.**

**Taking credit? Could it be, the person that had switched in the brocade-lined small box....was him?**

**The corner of Su Luo's mouth was slightly upturned. She faintly smiled while shooting him a quick glance. She really wanted to see what kind of game this Venerable Beichen was playing.**

**The soldier respectfully offered up the small box, momentarily unsure as to who to hand it to.**

**Normally, it should be handed over to Su Zian, as he was the master of this house.**

**However in theory, among the crowd of people at the scene, the most royal in position could not surpass His Highness the Crown Prince.**

**Yet in theory, the most arrogant and publicized person perfectly described Beichen Ying.**

**The Crown Prince's indifferent eyes glimpsed at Beichen Ying, both hands**

**crossed at his back and his mouth rising into a faint sneer.**

**Beichen Ying made the exact same movement and posture as the Crown Prince, he even imitated the Crown Prince's facial expression. His actions once again infuriated the Crown Prince, making him almost flare up.**

**Su Zian thought about it and said: "Bring it up."**

**He received the small brocade box made of red sandalwood from the soldier's hand.**

**Momentarily, the eyes of everyone present at the scene landed upon this small brocade box made of red sandalwood.**

**The small brocade box was approximately the length of two adult person's hands, and the width was about one hand size. On the surface of the box was carved exquisite ornate artwork, with the drawing of the phoenix painted in gold. At a glance, people could tell that this box was worth a considerable amount.**

**Could it be that inside it indeed contained precious stones?**

**With expectant thoughts, Su Zian's hand slowly opened the sealed up, small brocade box. When he saw the item within the box, a suspicious expression appeared on Su Zian's face.**

**Inside, there were no precious stones, but ...a very thin book.**

**The book was one of the most common kinds, with a blue leather cover. There was also no title on the cover.**

**Could it be a book on secret martial arts manual?**

**Su Zian opened the book, he only flipped through one page, before a huge change occurred on his face!**

# Chapter 196 – The final truth (1)

---

Page after page, written in black and white, was actually...

The Crown Prince saw the huge change in Su Zian's expression, and a trace of doubt flashed through his eyes. He walked up a few steps and stood by Su Zian's side, leaning in sideways to look.

However, Su Zian's actions were like a bird startled by the twang of a bow. He rapidly sprang back with movements that were faster than lightning.

His Highness the Crown Prince was disgruntled!

The paranoid Crown Prince's gave a glare full of dark maliciousness and displeasure at Su Zian. An angry resentfulness appeared in his heart.

This Su Zian was simply too brazen!

Su Luo was also staring somewhat inquisitively at the blue leather book in Su Zian's hands. However, it was a pity that she was too far away from Su Zian's position and was unable to clearly see the words written in the book.

Now, the only unperturbed person at the scene was none other than the Venerable Beichen.

His beautiful pair of liquid eyes burned with radiance. The corner of his eyes were slightly raised, carrying an expression that showed he had expected it, and with the appearance of watching a play.

However, he seem to dislike this play as not being wonderful enough, and one only saw him gave a meaningful glance at the black-clothed person by his side.

The black-clothed man understood and nodded his head. Afterwards, his body immediately disappeared from where it stood.

When his body reappeared, he was already only an arm's length away from Su

Zian.

The knife-like thin hands of the black-clothed person was quick as lightning, pinched straight towards Su Zian's throat.

In Su Zian's mind, the image of the Crown Prince's imperial bodyguard being exterminated by the black-clothed man's two fingers appeared. He subconsciously and instinctively sent a palm attack towards the black-clothed man.

However, the black-clothed man's move was merely an empty maneuver. His intent was not to kill Su Zian, but rather to steal the blue leather book in his hand.

So, just when Su Zian counterattacked, he leaned sideways and avoided it. Two fingers like iron clamps hit Su Zian's pulse, holding him in place.

Su Zian's hand immediately lost all its strength, and the fingers holding the blue leather book became powerless as the book slid down.

Who knew what the black-clothed man was thinking, he single-handedly caught the blue leather book. It seemed like he had accidentally snapped the string that bound the blue leather book together. Naturally, apart from the instigator of this, Beichen Ying, and Su Luo who had paid close attention to the black-clothed man, nobody else noticed.

“Quickly return it to me!!!” Su Zian immediately became anxious!

The things inside that book absolutely must not be taken away by Beichen Ying. Otherwise, not only him, but also the entire Su Manor would die without a burial site!

The black-clothed man used his silence as answer, he quietly stood behind Beichen Ying. His entire body was enveloped in the shadows, unsympathetic, as if he didn't exist.

Su Zian saw that his words were ineffective against him, he turned his head and glared at Beichen Ying with utter discontent: “Venerable Beichen! That is my Su family's...secret martial arts manual! The secret manual can't be passed on to others! It absolutely cannot end up in others' hands. So please, you must return this book to me! Otherwise——”

“Otherwise what?” Beichen Ying had both hands crossed behind his back. With an arrogant manner of someone in a higher position, he slanted a glance at Su Zian. His expression was rather like that of a person who had made an exception for Su Zian.

“Otherwise...” Su Zian bit down on his back molars, his ashen-colored face was unswervingly determined. He was only seen coldly shouting out, word by word: “Otherwise, my Su Manor will certainly hunt all of you down and kill you all in the end!”

Before, Beichen Ying was so arrogant in not giving him face and Su Zian had still endured it all. However, now because of a very small book, he would go to war, inside this...there was something extremely fishy going on.

What was it that was written in that little blue leather book that could make Su Zian so worried to such a degree?

As for Su Zian’s claim of the so-called secret martial arts manual, no matter what, Su Luo wouldn’t believe it.

Now Su Luo was somewhat curious, what was really written in that little blue leather book?

When Beichen Ying heard what he said, he started to laugh uproariously. He was laughing so hard that he almost couldn’t breathe, with great difficulty, he finally restrained his laughter: “Hunt down and kill in the end? Ha, ha, ha, I’m so scared.”

Everyone could tell that Beichen Ying’s words were sarcastic.

## Chapter 197 – The final truth (2)

---

Yet unexpectedly, Beichen Ying only raised his sleeves and waved his hand, carelessly saying: “Mei Ying, since it’s already like this, you should send it back.”

Mei Ying (1) the person, was like his name. His figure was ghost-like and he also made no sound, maintaining his manner as though silence was golden.

One could only see the afterimage of his right hand’s action, then the blue leather book shot towards Su Zian in a parabolic arc.

Everyone’s anxious gaze was locked in midair on the blue leather book. Pair after pair of eyes contained complex rays of light, burning with radiance, each with their own thoughts.

However— —

The next second, an unexpected event occurred.

The string binding the blue leather book was snapped in midair, resulting in countless snow white pieces of paper fluttering about like snowflakes, gently falling to the ground...

As far as Su Jingyu’s type of person was concerned, he dared not rob, but since it had already spread to the ground, if he took the opportunity to pick it up and by chance happened to take a peek, then it shouldn’t be a problem.

Therefore, Su Jingyu bent down to scoop up the paper.

However— —

However, before his fingers could touch the paper, he saw a stream of flame suddenly rush towards his hand! The momentum of the flame was like a rushing torrent, with nothing held back!

Su Jingyu whirled his body to avoid it, and turned his body around to look

back. He discovered that the person that had attacked him was not an outsider, but rather the person he respected the most, his honorable father!

**“Father!”** Su Jingyu was simply in disbelief!

He would never have imagined, that the person that had attacked him would be Su Zian, his own biological father!

Su Zian angrily roared: **“Don’t move! Nobody is allowed to move!”**

Everyone was stunned by Su Zian’s berserk behavior, without exception, they stupidly looked at him.

However, the Su Zian right now seemed not to care the least bit about everyone’s gaze. His mission was to make sure that not a single piece of paper remained in this world.

Numerous small balls of fire condensed in Su Zian’s palm and swept towards the ground.

The fluttering pieces of paper on the ground were immediately transformed into light smoke, and disappeared into the air.

Seeing the pieces of paper being destroyed, Su Zian’s complexion eased a little. He slowly relaxed and let out a soft, long breath of air.

However at this point in time, if there were no onlookers, he wanted to burn it then no one would object. But now, on top of His Highness the Crown Prince, there was also the Venerable president Beichen. Su Zian’s actions were too excessive. His attempts to hide it made it even more conspicuous. Therefore, Su Zian still needed to face a series of interrogations.

The Crown Prince was the first to show displeasure on his face. His complexion was hazed over with an ashen color, his pair of dark eyes unblinkingly stared at Su Zian.

In his view, Su Zian had ignored this master and was too arrogant!

Su Zian’s entire face was full of bitterness, but he could only swallow the bitterness and stuff it in his stomach. How could he explain it? What could he use to explain?

Beichen Ying saw Su Zian and the Crown Prince being at odds, and his heart

had already opened up with happiness. However, his face still had to feign anger and said: “General Su! What do you mean by this? What things cannot be seen by us? You would actually deliberately destroy it in front of the Crown Prince? In your eyes, do you still have His Majesty the Emperor? Do you still have His Highness the Crown Prince?!”

Su Zian’s heart was suffering bitterly from anger!

In regards to who was the most arrogant, if you, Beichen Ying, resigned yourself to being second, nobody else would dare to be known as first. Now, you have reversed everything and fastened this criminal charge on Su Zian’s body.

Although Beichen Ying’s words were unpleasant to hear, however, it completely struck at the Crown Prince’s weak spot. His malicious and sharp eyes glared at Su Zian. His complexion was like condensed austerity, so gloomy as to be terrifying.

Su Zian grinded his teeth and hurriedly kneeled down. Suddenly, his brain was hit by inspiration, but his face only revealed a terrified expression: “Your Highness the Crown Prince, that thing really had rumors that would spread a cold. This old man is afraid it will dirty the Crown Prince’s eyes. Therefore, I hurriedly destroyed it.”

“Humph!” The Crown Prince threw his sleeves skeptically.

Would Beichen Ying let Su Zian so easily pass this test? Quite clearly, he would not.

*1) Mei Ying – literally translated as phantom or shadow.*

## Chapter 198 – The final truth (3)

---

One could only see his eyes wide open, with an exaggerated incredulous expression: “General Su, how can you lie to His Highness the Crown Prince? Just now you clearly said that it was your Su Manor’s secret martial arts manual. How come in a blink of an eye it transformed into a book of pornographic drawings? You shouldn’t lie without even batting an eyelid.”

In this split second, Su Luo felt that the Venerable Beichen Ying was quite adorable. At least in front of Su Zian, that ability to wound was something simply no one could withstand.

A book of drawings that would harm public morals was dug up in Su Luo’s courtyard. Very obviously if this was to spread out, it would harm Su Luo’s womanly reputation. It would make her the laughingstock of the entire capital.

Very clearly, Su Zian intended to bluff his way out. However he completely forgot to worry about how much harm this would cause Su Luo.

In his heart, perhaps only someone he could make use of and could benefit from was of interest to him...When he landed in a such a predicament, would Madam Su also end up as an easily discardable chess piece? With regards to this point, Su Luo had expectant thoughts.

Speaking of Su Zian.

This sentence spoken by Beichen Ying was obviously a slap to Su Zian’s face. Moreover it was said in front of everyone as he had ruthlessly slapped him with those words.

Su Zian’s expression momentarily hazed over. His pair of penetrating eyes ignited into two flames. He glared coldly and darkly at Beichen Ying.

Now he was completely certain, Beichen Ying definitely came to Su Manor to

pick a quarrel.

Seeing the Crown Prince show displeasure, Su Zian hurriedly stated: “Your Highness the Crown Prince, that really was a book with drawings that could damage a person’s decency. If it was truly a secret martial arts manual, how could I be willing to burn it? The reason why I was so deeply worried, was, was because if this was spread out, then it would be detrimental to my family’s Luo’er.”

Once these words were spoken, around more than half of the people present believed it; including the Crown Prince. Because this justification was quite sufficient and also necessary.

A father, in order to protect his own daughter’s womanly reputation, had become so deeply worried that he had anxiously set all traces on fire.

Ah, it really was a very dignified justification. A faint mocking sneer appeared at the corner of Su Luo’s mouth.

Su Zian was truly not stupid, he could pull this out at the most critical moment. It was sufficient to illustrate his viciousness, mercilessness and shrewd reaction. However, obviously he underestimated the strength of a certain young lady that he just framed.

He still had not had a chance to directly experience Miss Su’s sinister cunningness.

Only, Su Luo intended to allow him to carefully observe it this time.

Everyone’s identical gaze concentrated upon Su Luo’s. Those gazes contained disdain, derision, scorn and so on, with all kinds of complex overtones. The Crown Prince used an even more deep gaze full of meaning to make fun of Su Luo while seizing her up and down. That sort of gaze made Su Luo very uncomfortable.

But Su Luo only faintly smiled.

She looked at her cheap old man with a smile that was not quite a smile. Suddenly, an extra thin piece of paper actually appeared in her hand. On the paper was something written out in black and white. However they were too far away, so everyone could not see it very clearly.

Su Luo leisurely waved that piece of paper around with a careless smile on the corner of her mouth. “Honorable father, that thing that you just said had morally corrupt drawings, was referring to the stuff on this piece of paper, right?”

“Boom——” Su Zian felt the blood from the sole of his feet rush up to his forehead in a split second. For a short period of time, his mind became stupefied.

Seeing Su Luo’s mocking and derisive manner, Su Zian’s entire body immediately became stiff.

How, how could there be one more page? When did this loathsome girl pick it up?!

Such a dramatic development unexpectedly appearing caught everyone unprepared!

Just now, almost all the sheets of paper were destroyed by Su Zian instantly. Consequently everyone had no choice but to listen to his nonsense.

## Chapter 199 – The final truth (4)

---

However now, there was still one piece of paper left in Su Luo's hands. Then there was still another opportunity to find out the truth, right?

In fact, Su Luo's execution of her plan had been beautifully done.

She merely had to wave that piece of paper in her hand to be able to wash clean the dirty water that Su Zian had spilled onto her.

It was because she dared to brazenly take it out in front of everyone, this demonstrated that the stuff was not the nonsense of immoral things that Su Zian had said.

After all if it was true, then the first person who would want to destroy that paper the most would not be Su Zian but Su Luo herself.

Su Zian glared at Su Luo, his appearance was imposing, cold and solemn: "Luo'er, be obedient. Quickly destroy that stuff!"

Su Luo faintly smiled and raised her eyebrows: "Daddy, why are you so anxious? Your daughter is really curious. Was it this stuff that will harm public morals... in the end what is it?" Saying this, Su Luo's eyes swept around her surrounding once. Then, she looked at Su Zian again and softly said: "Seeing everyone's expression, it seems as if everyone is very curious. Daddy, how about we let everyone have a look at it and let them judge? What do you think?"

These remarks, infuriated Su Zian until he almost fell down.

Was this not an unfilial and rebellious daughter! It truly infuriated him to death!

Su Zian was so angry that he almost directly went up to choke Su Luo to death. However in reality, he was not allowed to do something like this.

Madam Su and Su Zian had been married for so many years that she could clearly understand his thinking. With a smile, she used a soft-spoken voice to say to Su Luo: “Luo’er, don’t be mad at your father. How could there be enmity between a father and a daughter from before? Besides, what your father did is for your own good, isn’t it so?”

While Madam Su was speaking, she also tried to get closer to Su Luo.

Now everyone who was at the scene had their gaze concentrated on Madam Su and Su Luo. Almost no one saw Su Zian surreptitiously give a meaningful look at Captain Zhao.

Captain Zhao understood at once, he was hidden behind Su Luo. He silently tried to get closer to Su Luo...

Three steps, two steps, one step....

Just when his hands reached out to snatch away the paper from Su Luo’s hand. Suddenly——

A black shadow gave rise to an eerie and cold wind. The wind was like the edge of a blade, following along Captain Zhao’s hand and slicing towards the wrist!

In a flash, Captain Zhao’s wrist was cut from his arm!

“Ahhhh——” Because of the acute pain, Captain Zhao’s body dropped to the floor. He painfully cradled his arm which continued to spurt out blood. His facial features were twisted hideously due to pain.

Blood gushed out onto the ground.

Drops of various sizes and shapes could be seen.

The air was filled with the thick smell of blood.

Su Luo’s fine eyebrows wrinkled slightly. Her gaze frankly looked at Su Zian. The sneer at the corner of her mouth was very obvious, “Honorable father, you wouldn’t kill your daughter to silence her because of this little piece of paper, right?”

Su Zian was so furious that his complexion became ashen, and he angrily rebuked: “What rubbish talk! Anyway, quickly shut up!”

Beichen Ying only rubbed his hands and smiled: “General Su, this play really is extremely fascinating. This lord is very interested in watching it.” Saying this, he walked towards Su Luo step by step. He raised an eyebrow and smiled at her: “The fourth Miss Su, would it be convenient for you to let me see that piece of paper? I am very curious about it...”

Su Luo looked indifferent, her gaze shot to Su Zian. Seeing his black face and him repeatedly shaking his head with eyes like a sharp sword, sharp enough to pierce through her heart.

If the expression in someone’s eyes could kill, then Su Luo’s body would by now have been sliced into many pieces.

Meeting that pair of sharp and hawk-like eyes, the corner of Su Luo’s mouth lifted slightly when answering Beichen Ying: “The Venerable Beichen wants to see, however, it seems as if my honorable father is not willing...”

Besides, the brocade box was clearly placed there by you, Beichen Ying. You clearly knew what was inside better than anyone else.

## Chapter 200 – The final truth (5)

---

Beichen Ying's gift for acting was something he was born with. He glanced at that piece of paper in Su Luo's hand. With only a quick glance, his brows knotted tightly. Then he looked at Su Zian with a complicated expression.

That kind of serious stare with an incredulous expression simply frightened Su Zian until he was scared witless. His heart continuously jumped with 'ba-thump, ba-thump' sounds.

Furthermore, with Beichen Ying's appearance of desiring to speak and his hesitation that showed he was about to say something, but was unsure of how to do it; it practically resembled a claw that scratched at Su Zian's secure body, making it itch everywhere.

The corner of Su Luo's mouth stretched back and forth, he simply made her speechless.

Alas, how could she say it?

In fact, Su Zian's actions just now were really fast. When he was destroying the evidence, it was so fast that nobody had enough time to react.

Moreover, she was far from the book, so logically speaking, she basically had no chance to grab at the scattered pieces of white paper. Of course in reality, it should also be this way.

Then, why would another piece of paper appear in her hand? Actually, this was all credited to Su Luo's innate conman characteristic.

This piece of paper was one that she took from her space. Additionally this piece of paper was presumably one Su Zian would be familiar with, because on top of it was written the sacred scriptures she copied last time.

Since she had it pinched in between her fingers, nobody discovered that this

was a fake.

The most pitiful would be her cheap father, who was staring at this piece of paper, with his eyeballs almost about to pop out. If he knew that in fact, this piece of paper was a fake...Surely his expression would be extremely marvelous to look at, right?

“Luo’er! Quickly bring that piece of paper over here!” Su Zian anxiously said.

Actually, Su Luo’s heart was genuinely curious, in the end, what secrets were written on the real pieces of paper that made Su Zian this worried?

However, Su Luo naturally would not return this piece of paper. If she returned it, wouldn’t everyone know that she was running a con?

One could only see Su Luo frowning, she looked at Beichen Ying then at Su Zian, as if very uncertain. After quite a while, she indecisively said: “In fact, shouldn’t today’s main topic be the theft of stolen goods? Honorable father, wouldn’t you say so?”

Since Su Zian could crawl up to the position of a great general, then how could he be that stupid?

He promptly understood and said: “What stolen goods? Rubbish talk! Your courtyard is clean and neat, there is nothing here!”

Su Luo’s appearance once again became hesitant: “But...Mother, older brother and fifth younger Sister, didn’t all of them denounce this daughter as the person who tried to find someone to frame third older sister?”

Su Zian broadly waved his hand and sternly responded: “There is absolutely no such thing! That was your mother and them talking rubbish, causing mischief due to selfish reasons! Making you suffer from being wronged. This point, Daddy will make them provide you with a formal apology.”

Why...Madam Su merely felt that today’s sunlight was blazing so fiercely. It shined on her until her mind felt waves of dizziness, nearly making her fall over.

Married for so many years, she truly didn’t expect he would criticize her in front of so many people, saying she spoke nonsense, and had caused mischief

from selfish motives....This, this how grave of an accusation was this? Clearly, every decision had been made by him.

Not limited to Madam Su, Su Jingyu and Su Xi's expressions were also not very good. They glared at Su Zian with disbelief and also angrily glared at Su Luo.

Who would have thought, that even though Su Zian had lowered his posture thus far, Su Luo was still not satisfied.

One could see her looking at the messy house that had been thoroughly searched, as she faintly sighed a few times: "Alas, now this courtyard has been tossed about into this appearance. It will take a long time to tidy up..."

"No problem! Daddy will order people to help you..." Su Zian saw that the corner of Su Luo's mouth had a faint sarcastic meaning. He abruptly came to realize her meaning. He waved his big hands, in a heroic manner as though reaching to the clouds: "Daddy will immediately order people to tidy up the east side Wisteria Park for you to live in. You should be at ease, as at that time, everything you need will be available. What your fifth younger sister has, you would not lack."